



# DENOMINATIONAL DOCTRINES

**WARNING: SINGLE USER product.**  
Use of this material is limited to the registered user.

Materials provided on CD NOTES are copyrighted by World Video Bible School® and **MAY NOT** be used, reproduced, distributed, republished, displayed, broadcast, hyperlinked or transmitted, in whole or in part, in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical including photocopying, electronic transfer, installing on computers, recording or the use of any information storage and retrieval system, outside of the following permitted use limits as defined in FAQ available from the main menu.

**Serving the Church since 1986**

**Copyright © 2011 WORLD VIDEO BIBLE SCHOOL®**

25 Lantana Lane, Maxwell, Texas 78656

Email: [biblestudy@wvbs.org](mailto:biblestudy@wvbs.org) Phone: (512) 398-5211

Website: [www.wvbs.org](http://www.wvbs.org)

# SYLLABUS

## I. GENERAL INFORMATION.

- A. Instructor: Wesley Simons.
- B. This course consists of 36 lessons on 12 DVDs.
- C. Each class is approximately 38 minutes long.

## II. DESCRIPTION AND PURPOSE.

- A. To know Bible truth (doctrine).
- B. To recognize religious error (denominational doctrine).
- C. To be able to recognize and correct unlawful trends resulting from false doctrine.
- D. To be able to teach the truth to others, thereby correcting false doctrine.

## III. INSTRUCTIONAL MATERIALS.

- A. Required.
  - 1. Bible (ASV, KJV or NKJV).
  - 2. 36 video lessons.
  - 3. Course notes.
- B. Optional.
  - 1. Hightower, Terry, ed. *Denominationalism Versus The Bible*. Pensacola, FL: Austin McGary and Co, 1992.
  - 2. Mead, Frank S. *Handbook Of Denominations*. Nashville: Abingdon Press, 1987.
  - 3. Wallace, G. K. *Lectures On Denominational Dogmas*. Henderson, TN: Freed-Hardeman College, 1978.

#### **IV. REQUIREMENTS.**

- A. Read the entire book of Acts during this course.
- B. Read one debate book dealing with any denominational doctrine. NOTE: If you do not have access to a debate book you may substitute by reading through the book of Acts *twice*.
- C. View all 36 video lessons in their entirety.
- D. Read the class notes in their entirety.
- E. Complete all memory work (explained below).
- F. Submit a term paper (explained below).
- G. Take two written tests.
- H. Have a combined grade average of at least 70.

#### **V. MEMORY WORK.**

- A. Memory verses must be written (or typed) from memory, then mailed to VBI for grading. Verses must come from the ASV, KJV or NKJV, according to what you indicated on your VBI enrollment application.
- B. All verses must be written out or typed at one sitting. You may study more and start over if you make a mistake, but you must still start again from the beginning and write all the verses at one sitting.
- C. For this course, the following verses must be memorized:

Deuteronomy 4:2	1 Corinthians 1:10
Proverbs 30:6	Galatians 1:8
Matthew 7:15	1 Thessalonians 5:21
Matthew 15:9	2 John 9
John 6:29	Jude 3
Acts 2:38	Revelation 22:18,19
- D. Memory work is due when you mail VBI your second written test.
- E. Hint: A good method of memorizing is to write the verses on flash cards that can be easily reviewed throughout the course.

## **VI. TESTS.**

- A. There are two written tests. The first comes after lesson #18 (the sixth tape). The second comes after lesson #36 (the twelfth tape).
- B. When you near lesson #18, contact us and request the first test. When you near the end of the course, request the second test.
- C. When you receive a test, you have permission to look at it and study it.
- D. However, when you take a test, you must do so completely from memory, with no help from notes, Bible, textbook, etc.

## **VII. TERM PAPER.**

- A. Choose one of the following topics and write a paper on it. Explain what your subject believes and contrast it with what the Bible says.

Assembly of God  
Baptist Church  
Calvinism  
Christian Scientism  
Disciples of Christ  
Episcopalian Church  
Evangelical Free Church  
Freemasonry  
Independent Christian Church  
Lutheran Church  
Methodist Church  
Mormonism  
Pentecostalism  
Presbyterian Church  
Seventh Day Adventism

- B. The paper should be a minimum of seven pages, typed and double spaced. If handwritten, the paper should be a minimum of ten pages, single spaced.
- C. The paper is due when you mail VBI your final test and memory work.

## **VIII. GRADING.**

- A. Memory work, term paper and tests will be graded separately.
- B. Final grade is based on an average of all assigned work.

- C. You may request that a grade be explained or reconsidered, but in any case VBI will have the final say.

**IX. CREDIT.**

- A. Credit will be issued, including a certificate, only after all work has been successfully completed, tapes have been returned (if rented) and all fees for this particular course have been paid in full.
- B. May God richly bless your study of His inspired word!

**INTRODUCTION ..... 7**

**OUTLINE**

I REASONS TO DEFEND THE TRUTH AGAINST FALSE DOCTRINE .....12  
II FALSE DOCTRINE ABOUT JUDGING.....17  
III THE SIN OF THE FALSE DOCTRINE OF DENOMINATIONALISM.....18  
IV THOSE WHO TEACH FALSE DOCTRINE HATE THE WORDS: DO, WORK, AND OBEY .....19  
V THE BIBLE TEACHES AGAINST FALSE DOCTRINE BECAUSE OF THE SIN OF DIVISION .....22  
VI FALSE DOCTRINES ON AUTHORITY .....22  
VII FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING WHICH TESTAMENT IS IN FORCE.....31  
VIII FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING GOD .....36  
IX FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING CHRIST .....44  
X FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE HOLY SPIRIT .....46  
XI FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE BIBLE .....52  
XII FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE NATURE OF MAN.....60  
XIII FALSE DOCTRINES OF CALVINISM .....67  
XIV FALSE DOCTRINES ON THE PLAN OF SALVATION .....77  
XV FALSE DOCTRINES IN WORSHIP .....108  
XVI FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE CHURCH .....128  
XVII FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING FINAL THINGS .....137  
XVIII FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE MIRACULOUS .....171  
XIX FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE ORGANIZATION OF THE CHURCH.....184  
XX FALSE DOCTRINES ON MORALS.....185

**SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT BAPTIST CHURCHES..... 209**

**SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT THE METHODIST CHURCHES..... 211**

**SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT PENTECOSTAL CHURCHES ..... 213**

**SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT MORMONISM ..... 215**

**SOME THINGS BRETHREN SHOULD KNOW ABOUT THE EPISCOPAL CHURCH ..... 216**

**SOME THINGS BRETHREN SHOULD KNOW ABOUT THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH ..... 218**

**SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT PRESBYTERIAN CHURCHES ..... 220**

**SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT JEHOVAH’S WITNESSES ..... 223**

**APPENDIX**

THE HISTORY AND HERESIES OF THE JEHOVAH’S WITNESSES .....226  
MORMONISM AND PROPHECY.....232  
THE BAPTIST CHURCH MANUAL .....234  
THE ORIGIN AND HISTORY OF THE BAPTIST CHURCH .....237  
IN SEARCH OF THE BAPTIST CHURCH.....240

**DENOMINATIONAL DOCTRINE**  
**by Wesley Simons**  
**INTRODUCTION**

A. The Bible tells of a falling away.

1. 1 Timothy 4:1-3 Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils; <sup>2</sup>Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; <sup>3</sup>Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.
2. Acts 20:28-30 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. <sup>29</sup>For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock. <sup>30</sup>Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.
3. 2 Thessalonians 2:3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for *that day shall not come*, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition.

B. The departure from the faith has occurred.

C. The Roman Catholic church evolved doctrine by doctrine and point by point.\*

1. Worship of Mary, the mother of Jesus. .... A.D. 431
2. Worship in Latin language ..... A.D. 600
3. Papacy of pagan origin ..... A.D. 610
4. Kissing the Pope's feet ..... A.D. 709
5. Temporal power of the Pope..... A.D. 730
6. Adoration of Mary and other saints ..... A.D. 788
7. Adoration of the cross, images and relics ..... A.D. 788
8. Blessing of Bulls ..... A.D. 965
9. Fabrication of holy water ..... A.D. 1009
10. Marriage of priests forbidden ..... A.D. 1079
11. Rosary beads invented ..... A.D. 1090
12. Sales of Indulgence ..... A.D. 1190
13. Sacrifice of Mass ..... A.D. 1215
14. Transubstantiation of bread ..... A.D. 1215
15. Auricular confession to the priest..... A.D. 1215

16. Purgatory proclaimed..... A.D. 1438
17. Tradition held equal with the Bible ..... A.D. 1545
18. Immaculate conception of Mary ..... A.D. 1845
19. Infallibility of the Pope ..... A.D. 1870
20. Apocryphal books added to the Bible ..... A.D. 1546

\* Section taken from The True Religion & Religion of Others.

- D. Men started to protest against the Catholic church. Therefore, man is the source of the Protestant movement.

<b>Origin Of Denominations</b>			
Institution	Place	Date	Founder
Adventist	Massachusetts	1831	William Miller
American Baptist	Providence, RI.	1639	Roger Williams
Apostolic Faith Mission	United States	1900	Group
Assembly of God	Hot Springs, AR.	1914	Group
Baptist Church	London, England	1607	John Smyth
Brethren/Dunkards	Scwarzenau, Germany	1708	Hochmann & Mack
Brethren in Christ	United States	1820	Group
Catholic Apostolic Church	England	1830	Group
Christadelphians	United States	1844	John Thomas, MD.
Christian Church	Midway, KY	1859	Group
Christian Science	Boston, MA.	1879	Mary Baker Eddy
Church of England	England	1535	King Henry VIII
Church of God	Monroe County, TN.	1886	Group
Church of God	United States	1880	D. S. Warner
Church of God, Hol.	Atlanta, GA.	1914	K. H. Burrus
Church of the Living God	Wrightsville, AR.	1889	William Christian
Congregational Church	Massachusetts	1684	Group
Cumberland Presbyterian	Dickson County, TN.	1810	Group
Dutch Reformed Church	Holland	1560	Group
Evangelical Church	Pennsylvania	1803	Jacob Albright
Evangelical and Reformed	Cleveland, OH.	1934	Group
Foursquare Gospel	Los Angeles, CA.	1917	Aimee S. McPherson
Freewill Baptist	New Durham, NC.	1780	Benjamin Randall
Full Gospel Church	Goldsboro, NC	1935	R. H. Askew
Greek Orthodox Church	Greece	1053	Group
Holiness Church	Chicago, Il.	1907	Howard Hoople
House of David	Michigan	1903	Group
Independent Holiness	Van Alstyne, TX	1900	C. B. Jernigan
Jehovah's Witnesses	Pennsylvania	1874	Charles T. Russell
Lutheran Church	Augsburg, Germany	1530	Martin Luther
Mennonite Church	Zurich, Switzerland	1525	Group

Methodist Church	London, England	1729	John Wesley
Methodist Episcopal	Baltimore, MD.	1874	Group
Mormon Church	Seneca, NY.	1830	Joseph Smith
Mormon Church Reorganized	Wisconsin	1852	Joseph Smith II
Moravian Church	Kunwald, Bohemia	1457	Group
Nazarene Church	Los Angeles, CA.	1895	P. F. Bresee
New Apostolic Church	Hamburg, Germany	1862	Pruess
Pentecostal Holiness	Anderson, SC.	1898	Group
Pilgrim Holiness Church	Cincinnati, OH.	1897	Group
Plymouth Brethren	Dublin, Ireland	1829	Group
Presbyterian Church	Switzerland	1535	John Calvin
Primitive Baptist	North Carolina	1765	Group
Quakers	England	1650	George Fox
Roman Catholic	Rome, Italy	606	Group
Salvation Army	London, England	1865	William Booth
Seventh Day Adventism	Massachusetts	1846	Ellen G. White
Spiritualist Church	United States	1848	Andrew J. Davis
Theosophical Society	New York City	1875	Helena Blavatsky
The Unity School	Kansas City, MO.	1889	Charles Filmore
Unitarians	Poland	16th. C.	Faustus, Socinus, etc.
Universalist	New Jersey	1770	John Murray

- E. All of the aforementioned churches were started by the wrong person, at the wrong time, in the wrong place, teaching the wrong doctrine.
- F. We need to make sure that we are doing what God would have us do.
1. Matthew 7:21-23 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.
  2. Matthew 7:15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.
  3. 2 Thessalonians 2:8-12 And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: <sup>9</sup>Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, <sup>10</sup>And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. <sup>11</sup>And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie:

<sup>12</sup>That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

4. 1 John 4:1 Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

G. We must have Bible authority for what we do.

1. 1 Thessalonians 5:21 Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.
2. Colossians 3:17 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, *do* all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.
3. 1 Peter 4:11 If any man speak, *let him speak* as the oracles of God; if any man minister, *let him do it* as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.
4. Philippians 3:16 Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing.
5. Hebrews 8:5 Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle: for, See, saith he, *that* thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount.

H. One cannot teach one thing and someone else teach just the opposite and both be right.

I. What if I told you that:

- |                                     |                                  |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. Philip was a Baptist.            | 6. Paul was a Lutheran.          |
| 2. Bartholomew was a Catholic.      | 7. Peter was a 7th-Day Adventist |
| 3. Thomas was a Methodist.          | 8. James was a Presbyterian.     |
| 4. Matthew was a Mormon.            | 9. John was a Nazarene.          |
| 5. Thaddeus was a Jehovah's Witness | 10. Stephen was a Mennonite.     |

J. Would it be scriptural for me to preach all the beliefs of each of the aforementioned churches?

K. What is a denomination?

1. A religious group established by a man. Mark 7:7 Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men.

2. A philosophy that says one person can be one thing religiously and another person can be something else and both be right. 1 Corinthians 1:10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and *that* there be no divisions among you; but *that* ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.
3. It is the concept of becoming saved first and joining some religious group later. Acts 2:47 Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.
4. It is a group established by a man which is larger than the local church but smaller than the universal church. Therefore, it cannot be the true church because the word "church" is not used that way in the Bible.
5. A denomination does not claim to comprise all the saved. However, all the saved are located in the Lord's church. So, they cannot be one and the same.
6. One can be a Christian and not be a member of any denomination, but one cannot be a Christian without being a member of the Lord's church.
7. One can preach the Bible and never preach that one needs to be a member of any denomination, but one cannot preach the Bible faithfully without preaching the Lord's church.
8. One cannot take the Bible and learn how to become a member of any denomination.
9. Denominationalism did not exist in the first century.
10. The Lord promised to save His church, but who is going to save denominational churches? Ephesians 5:23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the Saviour of the body.

## DENOMINATIONAL DOCTRINES OUTLINE

### I. REASONS TO DEFEND THE TRUTH AGAINST FALSE DOCTRINE.

- A. Because it will set one free: John 8:32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.
- B. Because we are to contend for the faith: Jude 3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort *you* that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.
- C. Because we are to be ready to give a Bible answer: 1 Peter 3:15 But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and *be* ready always to *give* an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear.
- D. Because we are to prove all things: 1 Thessalonians 5:21 Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.
- E. Because the church is the pillar and the ground of the truth: 1 Timothy 3: 15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.
- F. Because Satan and his ministers are busy teaching error: 2 Corinthians 11:13-15 For such *are* false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. <sup>14</sup>And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. <sup>15</sup>Therefore *it is* no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.
- G. Because many have been misled: Matthew 7:21-23 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

- H. Because Satan needs to be exposed: Matthew 7:15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.
- I. Because one can believe a strong delusion: 2 Thessalonians 2:9-12 *Even him*, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, <sup>10</sup>And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. <sup>11</sup>And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: <sup>12</sup>That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.
- J. Because false teachers need to be exposed: Romans 16:17,18 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offenses contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. <sup>18</sup>For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.
- K. Because those who continue not in the doctrine of Christ have not God: 2 John 9-11 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son. <sup>10</sup>If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into *your* house, neither bid him God speed: <sup>11</sup>For he that biddeth him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds.
- L. Because some are perverting the gospel of Christ: Galatians 1:6-9 I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: <sup>7</sup>Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. <sup>8</sup>But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. <sup>9</sup>As we said before, so say I now again, If any *man* preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed.
- M. Because if one adds to or takes from the gospel his part will be taken from the book of life: Revelation 22:18,19 For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: <sup>19</sup>And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and *from* the things which are written in this book.
- N. Because we are to be set for a defense of the gospel: Philippians 1:17 But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defense of the gospel.

- O. Because religious division is wrong: 1 Corinthians 1:10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and *that* there be no divisions among you; but *that* ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.
- P. Because worshiping according to creeds and doctrines of men is vain: Mark 7:7 Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men.
- Q. Because the many that are going down the broad way need to be warned: Matthew 7:13,14 Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide *is* the gate, and broad *is* the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: <sup>14</sup>Because strait *is* the gate, and narrow *is* the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.
- R. Because converting people is a teaching and learning process: John 6:44, 45 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. <sup>45</sup>It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.
- S. Because the gospel is God's power to save: Romans 1:16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.
- T Because we must reason with people: Acts 18:4 And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks.
- U. Because some men oppose themselves: Acts 18:6 And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook *his* raiment, and said unto them, Your blood *be* upon your own heads; I *am* clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.
- V. Because some people do not know how to rightly divide the word of truth: 2 Timothy 2:15 Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.
- W. Because some have a zeal of God but not according to knowledge: Romans 10:1-4 Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved. <sup>2</sup>For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. <sup>3</sup>For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God. <sup>4</sup>For Christ *is* the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

- X. Because those who do not obey the gospel will be lost eternally: 2 Thessalonians 1:6-9 Seeing *it is* a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; <sup>7</sup>And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, <sup>8</sup>In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>9</sup>Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power.
  
- Y. Because we know the value of a soul: Matthew 16:26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?
  
- Z. Because we must take a stand or be lost: Ephesians 6:13,14 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. <sup>14</sup>Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness.

On the next page we have marked the doctrines you need to study when you are preparing to study with various people. Not all religious people of some groups believe the same thing. Be ready when you go on a study to deal with: (1) Faith only; (2) Instrumental music; (3) Baptism; (4) The church; (5) The organization of the church;(6) Miracles; (7) All five points of Calvinism; (8) Once saved, always saved; (9) The day of worship; (10) The Lord's supper; (11) Various errors on the Godhead; (12) Modern day revelation; (13) Unity; (14) The sin of division.

## DENOMINATIONS AND THEIR CORE BELIEFS

	Faith only	Denial of essentiality of baptism	Denial of essentiality of the church	Once saved, always saved	Miracles today	Denial of essentiality of Lord's Supper on first day of the week	Denial of essentiality of biblical organization of the church	Uses instrumental music	Believes in modern day revelation	Believes error on the Godhead	Believes in tongue speaking	Teaches total hereditary depravity	Believes in premillennialism	Wrong on day of worship
Baptist	Yes	Yes	Yes	Some	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	No	Yes	Yes	No
Methodist	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	No	Yes	Yes	No
Catholic	No	No	No	No	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	No	Yes	Yes	No
Jehovah's Witness	No	Yes	Yes	No	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	Yes	Life on earth	No
United Pentecostal	No	No	No (Their group)	No	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	No
Church of God	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Some	Some	Yes	Yes	Yes	No
Mormon	No	Some	Yes	No	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Some	Yes	Some	No
Adventist	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	Yes	Yes	Yes
Presbyterian Hard core Calvinist	No	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	Yes God's love	No	Yes	Yes	No

## II. FALSE DOCTRINE ABOUT JUDGING.

A John 7:24 Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

B. Matthew 7:1-29.

1. Matthew 7:1-4 Judge not, that ye be not judged. <sup>2</sup>For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. <sup>3</sup>And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? <sup>4</sup>Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam *is* in thine own eye?
2. This is talking about hypocritical judging. Matthew 7:5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.
3. Do not cast pearls before swine, v. 6.
4. Ask and it shall be given you, vv. 7-11.
  - a. For what does one ask?
  - b. To whom does one take this petition?
  - c. Must one pray only in harmony with God's will?
5. Do unto others as you would have them to do unto you, v. 12.
6. Enter ye in at the strait gate, avoid the broad gate, vv. 13,14.
7. Beware of false prophets, v. 15.
8. One can know them by their fruits, vv. 16-20.
9. Those who do the Father's will are saved, v. 21.
10. Many are deceived, vv. 22,23.
11. A wise man hears and obeys, vv. 24,25.
12. A fool hears and will not obey, vv. 26,27.

13. We must make a decision about Jesus, vv. 28,29.
- C. 1 Corinthians 5:12,13 For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within? <sup>13</sup>But them that are without God judgeth. Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person.
- D. Are world religions right in the sight of God?
- E. Are the Jehovah's Witnesses and Mormons right in the sight of God?
- F. How can we obey the great commission if we do not make judgments?

### III. THE SIN OF THE FALSE DOCTRINE OF DENOMINATIONALISM.

- A. It is a sin against God.
1. It makes God the author of confusion.
  2. 1 Corinthians 14:33 For God is not *the author* of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.
- B. It is a sin against Christ.
1. He prayed for unity. John 17:20,21 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; <sup>21</sup>That they all may be one; as thou, Father, *art* in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.
  2. He practiced unity. John 10:30 I and *my* Father are one.
  3. He preached unity. Matthew 12:25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand.
  4. He planned unity. Ephesians 2:13,14 But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. <sup>14</sup>For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition *between us*.
- C. It is a sin against the Holy Spirit.

1. It leaves the impression that the Holy Spirit is leading one preacher, or church, to say one thing and another preacher, or church, to say something else.
2. The Holy Spirit led the apostles into all truth and He did not become confused. John 16:13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.

D. It is a sin against the Bible.

1. Because of the sin of denominationalism, many people believe that one can prove anything by the Bible.
2. Most religious people use their feelings as a standard rather than the Bible.
3. 1 Peter 4:11 If any man speak, *let him speak* as the oracles of God; if any man minister, *let him do it* as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

E. It is a sin against prophecy.

1. John 10:16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, *and* one shepherd.

F. It is a sin against society.

1. Denominationalism confuses people and they do not know what they need to do in order to be saved.

G. It is a sin against the family.

1. God never intended for the husband to be one thing religiously and the wife and the children to be something else.

#### IV. **THOSE WHO TEACH FALSE DOCTRINE HATE THE WORDS: “DO,” “WORK,” AND “OBEY.”**

- A. Matthew 7:21-23 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not

prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

- B. Luke 6:46 And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?
- C. John 14:15 If ye love me, keep my commandments.
- D. John 15:14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.
- E. Hebrews 5:8,9 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup>And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him.
- F. James 1:21-27 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. <sup>22</sup>But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. <sup>23</sup>For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: <sup>24</sup>For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. <sup>25</sup>But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth *therein*, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed. <sup>26</sup>If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion *is* vain. <sup>27</sup>Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, *and* to keep himself unspotted from the world.
- G. James 2:24-26 Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. <sup>25</sup>Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent *them* out another way? <sup>26</sup>For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.
- H. 1 John 2:3,4 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. <sup>4</sup>He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.
- I. Revelation 22:14 Blessed *are* they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.
- J. Some works are necessary.

1. Acts 10:34,35 Then Peter opened *his* mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: <sup>35</sup>But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.
  2. John 6:28,29 Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? <sup>29</sup>Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.
  3. Acts 9:6 And he trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord *said* unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.
  4. Acts 2:40 And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation.
  5. Philippians 2:12 Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.
- K. Some works are excluded from God's plan to save today.
1. Works of the law: Galatians 2:16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.
  2. Works of self-righteousness: Matthew 5:20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.
  3. Works of merit: Ephesians 2:8,9 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God: <sup>9</sup>Not of works, lest any man should boast.
  4. Men might not realize it, but when they come up with their own plans of salvation, they are trying to work their way to heaven.
  5. Things like: faith only, one church just as good as another, mourners' bench salvation, etc. are attempts by men to save themselves. Thus, their works and not God's.

**V. THE BIBLE TEACHES AGAINST FALSE DOCTRINE BECAUSE OF THE SIN OF DIVISION.**

- A. Unauthorized division is sinful.
- B. Is the body of Christ divided? How many heads does Christ have? How many bodies does He have?
- C. The religious world depicts Christ as a spiritual monster with one head and many bodies.
- D. John 17:20,21 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; <sup>21</sup>That they all may be one; as thou, Father, *art* in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.
- E. 1 Corinthians 1:10-13 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and *that* there be no divisions among you; but *that* ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment. <sup>11</sup>For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them *which are of the house of Chloe*, that there are contentions among you. <sup>12</sup>Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. <sup>13</sup>Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

**VI. FALSE DOCTRINES ON AUTHORITY.**

- A. Pope.
  - 1. Matthew 16:18,19 And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. <sup>19</sup>And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.
  - 2. Ex-cathedra statements.
  - 3. Reasons why Peter could not have been the first Pope.
    - a. He was married. Matt. 8:14; 1 Cor. 9:5; 1 Pet. 5:1; Titus 1:6. Catholics teach: ".....from the fourth century on mention

made of virginity especially dedicated to God” (Catholic Encyclopedia III, p. 420).

- b. He would not allow others to bow down before him. Acts 10: 25,26. Catholics teach: “The kissing of the pope’s foot – the characteristic act of reverence by which all the faithful do honor to him as the vicar of Christ – is found as early as the eight century.” (Catholic Encyclopedia, XII, p. 270)
- c. He was poor. Acts 3:6; Matt. 17:24-27. Catholics teach: “The immediate cause was bound up with the odious greed for money, displayed by the Roman Curia, and shows how far short all efforts at reform had hitherto fallen.” (Catholic Encyclopedia, IX, p. 166)
- d. He was a humble man. Matt. 23:9-11; 2 Pet. 1:1; 1 Pet. 5:3. Catholics teach: “She is the one institution that never changes.” (“Cardinal” Gibbons, Faith of our Fathers, p. 83)
- e. He did not consider himself infallible. Matt. 16:23; Gal. 2:11-14. Catholics teach: “.....his infallibility comes from the Spirit of God, which on certain occasions protects him from error in faith and morals.” (Catholic Dictionary, p. 677)
- f. He did not teach that he was the head of the church. 1 Pet. 5:4; Matt. 16:13-19. Catholics teach: “But the supreme teacher in the church is the Roman Pontiff. Union of mind, therefore, requires together with a perfect accord in the one faith, complete submission and obedience of will to the church and to the Roman Pontiff as to God Himself.” (Great Encyclical Letters, p. 193)
- g. Other apostles did not regard him as their superior. 2 Cor. 11:5. Catholics teach: “The Roman Pontiff has from on high an authority which is supreme, above all others and subject to none.” (Pius XI, in Encyclical, Light of Truth, p. 5)
- h. There is no Biblical evidence that he was ever in Rome. Rom. 16:3-15; 2 Tim. 4:11,16.
- i. He baptized those old enough to repent. Acts 2:38. Catholics teach: “When in the fourth and fifth centuries the doctrine of original sin and consequently the necessity of baptism for all became better known, the practice of infant

baptism progressed rapidly.” (Legislation of the sacraments in the New Code of Canon Law, p. 72)

j. He taught disciples to wear the name “Christian.” 1 Pet. 4:16.<sup>1</sup>

4. The Apostle Paul would have made a better pope!

a. Paul laboured more abundantly than them all: 1 Corinthians 15:10 But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which *was bestowed* upon me was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.

b. Paul was not a whit behind the chiefest apostle: 2 Corinthians 11:5 For I suppose I was not a whit behind the very chiefest apostles. 2 Corinthians 12:11 I am become a fool in glorying; ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behind the very chiefest apostles, though I be nothing.

c. Paul had the care of all the churches: 2 Corinthians 11:28 Beside those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

d. Paul was chosen to be a witness to all men: Acts 22:14,15 And he said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see that Just One, and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth. <sup>15</sup>For thou shalt be his witness unto all men of what thou hast seen and heard.

e. Paul was to open the eyes of people: Acts 26:16-18 But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; <sup>17</sup>Delivering thee from the people, and *from* the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee, <sup>18</sup>To open their eyes, *and* to turn *them* from darkness to light, and *from* the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

f. Paul was in Rome: Acts 23:11 And the night following the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good cheer, Paul: for as

---

<sup>1</sup> Harold Sain, Sermon Charts and outlines No.2 (Published by author, Aug. 1, 1963) p. 80-82.

thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness also at Rome.

- g. Paul was single: 1 Corinthians 9:5 Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?
- h. Paul wrote most of the New Testament: 2 Peter 3:16 As also in all *his* epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as *they do* also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.
- i. Paul rebuked Peter: Galatians 2:11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.
- j. Paul was the man who had workers with him and under him: Acts 20:4 And there accompanied him into Asia Sopater of Berea; and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus; and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus; and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.
- k. When Paul comes on the scene in the book of Acts, Peter is mentioned very little.
- l. When problems arose within churches, Paul was the one who was writing to them and telling them what they needed to do. Rom. 1:1; 1 Cor. 1:1; 2 Cor. 1:1; etc.

## B. Creeds.

- 1. Human creeds cannot be defended. The following is a quotation from the works of Benjamin Franklin:
  - a. First, any creed containing more than the Bible is objectionable, because it does contain more than the Bible.
  - b. Second, any creed containing less than the Bible is objectionable, because it does contain less than the Bible.
  - c. Third, any creed differing from the Bible is objectionable, because it does differ from the Bible.

- d. Fourth, any creed precisely like the Bible is useless, because we have the Bible.
  - e. This covers the whole ground. There can be no other thought of. A creed must contain more than the Bible, less than the Bible, differ from it, or be precisely like it.<sup>2</sup>
2. Deuteronomy 4:2 Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish *ought* from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you.
  3. Proverbs 30:6 Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar.
  4. Galatians 1:6-9 I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: <sup>7</sup>Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. <sup>8</sup>But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. <sup>9</sup>As we said before, so say I now again, If any *man* preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed.
  5. Revelation 22:18,19 For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: <sup>19</sup>And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and *from* the things which are written in this book.
  6. We must speak where the Bible speaks and remain silent where the Bible is silent.
  7. We must do Bible things Bible ways and call Bible things by Bible names.

C. Parents.

1. We are to follow any man only as far as he follows the Christ. 1 Corinthians 11:1 Be ye followers of me, even as I also *am* of Christ.

---

<sup>2</sup> Leroy Brownlow, Why I am a member of the Church of Christ (Brownlow Publishing Co., Inc., 1945) p. 47,48.

2. Ephesians 6:1 Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.
3. 1 Corinthians 4:6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and *to* Apollos for your sakes; that ye might learn in us not to think *of men* above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.
4. If mom and dad are showed to be wrong, will you stand against them?
5. Luke 14:26 If any *man* come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.
6. Matthew 10:37 He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

D. Conscience.

1. The conscience must be educated. Proverbs 22:6 Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it.
2. The conscience can honestly misguide us if uneducated. Acts 23:1 And Paul, earnestly beholding the council, said, Men *and* brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God until this day.
3. The conscience acts on what it believes to be right and wrong, Rom 14:1ff.
4. The conscience is a prodder and not the body of truth itself. Romans 2:15 Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and *their* thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another.
5. Our conscience cannot be our guide because we are to obey God and not men. Acts 5:29 Then Peter and the *other* apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men.
6. Our conscience cannot be our guide because we are saved by faith and faith comes by hearing God's word. Romans 10:17 So then faith *cometh* by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

7. We are set free by truth and not our conscience. John 8:32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.
8. We are sanctified by truth and not our conscience. John 17:17 Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.
9. If our conscience is our guide, then truth is subjective and everyone who is honest is right no matter what he believes. Rom. 10:17; Matthew 4:4 But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.
10. Our conscience cannot be our guide because we are to bring every thought in captivity unto the obedience of Christ. 2 Corinthians 10:5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.
11. Our conscience cannot be our guide because sin is a violation of God's law whether it violates our conscience or not. 1 John 3:4 Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.
12. Our conscience cannot be our guide because every man would become a law unto himself. Jeremiah 10:23 O LORD, I know that the way of man *is* not in himself: *it is* not in man that walketh to direct his steps.
13. Our conscience cannot be our guide because a thing would be both true and false at the same time. 1 Corinthians 1:10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and *that* there be no divisions among you; but *that* ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.
14. Our conscience cannot be our guide because that would make it possible for a man to be saved without being taught the word of God. James 1:21 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.
15. Our conscience cannot be our guide because there would be no standard for a final judgment. John 12:48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

16. Our conscience cannot be our guide for this would do away with church discipline. A church could not withdraw from anyone who claimed to be living in harmony with their conscience. 1 Corinthians 5:1 It is reported commonly *that there is* fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife.
17. Our conscience cannot be our guide because knowing God is predicated upon obeying God's commandments. 1 John 2:3,4 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. <sup>4</sup>He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.
18. Our conscience cannot be our guide because going to heaven is predicated upon doing the Father's will. Matthew 7:21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.
19. Our conscience cannot be our guide because it would make the Bible useless. Matthew 26:28 For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. Hebrews 9:16,17 For where a testament *is*, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator. <sup>17</sup>For a testament *is* of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator liveth.
20. Our conscience cannot be our guide because of what happened to Uzzah. 2 Samuel 6:3-8 And they set the ark of God upon a new cart, and brought it out of the house of Abinadab that *was* in Gibeah: and Uzzah and Ahio, the sons of Abinadab, drave the new cart. <sup>4</sup>And they brought it out of the house of Abinadab which *was* at Gibeah, accompanying the ark of God: and Ahio went before the ark. <sup>5</sup>And David and all the house of Israel played before the LORD on all manner of *instruments made of fir wood*, even on harps, and on psalteries, and on timbrels, and on cornets, and on cymbals. <sup>6</sup>And when they came to Nachon's threshing floor, Uzzah put forth *his hand* to the ark of God, and took hold of it; for the oxen shook *it*. <sup>7</sup>And the anger of the LORD was kindled against Uzzah; and God smote him there for *his error*; and there he died by the ark of God. <sup>8</sup>And David was displeased, because the LORD had made a breach upon Uzzah: and he called the name of the place Perezuz-zah to this day.
21. Our conscience cannot be our guide because we do not have an answer of a good conscience until we obey God. 1 Peter 3:21 The

like figure whereunto *even* baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

22. Our conscience cannot be our guide because we cannot have a good conscience until the blood of Christ is applied to our soul, Heb. 10:1-8.
23. Our conscience cannot be our guide because we might believe a lie, 1 Kings 13:1ff.
24. Our conscience cannot be our guide because at times our conscience and the word of God are in conflict. Acts 23:1 And Paul, earnestly beholding the council, said, Men *and* brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God until this day.
25. Our conscience cannot be our guide because Saul's conscience misguided him. Acts 23:1; Acts 26:9 I verily thought with myself, that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth.

#### E. Preachers.

1. Matthew 7:15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.
2. 1 John 4:1 Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.
3. 2 Corinthians 11:14,15 And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. <sup>15</sup>Therefore *it is* no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.
4. Revelation 2:2 I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars.

#### F. Feelings.

1. Proverbs 14:12 There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof *are* the ways of death.

2. Proverbs 28:26 He that trusteth in his own heart is a fool: but whoso walketh wisely, he shall be delivered.

G. Modern day revelation.

1. The Bible is complete. 2 Timothy 3:16,17 All scripture *is* given by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: <sup>17</sup>That the man of God may be perfect, throughly furnished unto all good works.
2. It contains all that pertains unto life and godliness. 2 Peter 1:3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that *pertain* unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue.
3. Paul preached the whole counsel of God without modern day revelation. And so can we. Acts 20:27 For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.
4. The Bible has been confirmed by miracles. Mark 16:20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with *them*, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen. Hebrews 2:1-4 Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let *them* slip. <sup>2</sup>For if the word spoken by angels was steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense of reward; <sup>3</sup>How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard *him*; <sup>4</sup>God also bearing *them* witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will?
5. Whose modern day revelation shall we believe? Mary Baker Eddy's, Joseph Smith's, Charles Taze Russell's, the Pope's, Ellen G. White's, etc.?

**VII. FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING WHICH TESTAMENT IS IN FORCE.**

- A. Some say we are under Old Testament law. (Reasons why we cannot live under Old Testament law.)
1. The priesthood has been changed. Hebrews 7:12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

2. The Law of Moses was given to Israel. Deuteronomy 5:1-6 And Moses called all Israel, and said unto them, Hear, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your ears this day, that ye may learn them, and keep, and do them. <sup>2</sup>The LORD our God made a covenant with us in Horeb. <sup>3</sup>The LORD made not this covenant with our fathers, but with us, *even us*, who *are* all of us here alive this day. <sup>4</sup>The LORD talked with you face to face in the mount out of the midst of the fire, <sup>5</sup>(I stood between the LORD and you at that time, to shew you the word of the LORD: for ye were afraid by reason of the fire, and went not up into the mount;) saying, <sup>6</sup>*I am* the LORD thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage.
  
3. If we try to keep it, we fall from grace. Galatians 5:4 Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.
  
4. If we try to keep it we commit spiritual adultery. Romans 7:1-4 Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? <sup>2</sup>For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to *her* husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of *her* husband. <sup>3</sup>So then if, while *her* husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man. <sup>4</sup>Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, *even* to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.
  
5. God told us to hear Jesus. Matthew 17:5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him. Hebrews 1:1,2 God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, <sup>2</sup>Hath in these last days spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.
  
6. Christ is superior to Moses. Deuteronomy 18:15-19 The LORD thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken; <sup>16</sup>According to all that thou desirest of the LORD thy God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, Let me not hear again the voice of the LORD my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, that I die not. <sup>17</sup>And the LORD said unto me, They have well *spoken that* which

they have spoken. <sup>18</sup>I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him. <sup>19</sup>And it shall come to pass, *that* whosoever will not hearken unto my words which he shall speak in my name, I will require *it* of him. Acts 3:22,23 For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you. <sup>23</sup>And it shall come to pass, *that* every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people. John 1:17 For the law was given by Moses, *but* grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

7. Moses' law is all or nothing. Galatians 5:2,3 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. <sup>3</sup>For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law.
8. A new covenant was foretold. Jeremiah 31:31-33 Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: <sup>32</sup>Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day *that* I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: <sup>33</sup>But this *shall be* the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people.
9. The law was changed. Hebrews 7:12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.
10. Jesus died to put His will into force. Matthew 26:28 For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. Hebrews 9:16,17 For where a testament *is*, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator. <sup>17</sup>For a testament *is* of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator liveth.
11. Jesus is the mediator of the New Testament. Hebrews 9:15 And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

12. To go back under the Old Testament is to give up on our only sacrifice (Christ). Hebrews 10:25-31 Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some *is*; but exhorting *one another*: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching. <sup>26</sup>For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, <sup>27</sup>But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. <sup>28</sup>He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: <sup>29</sup>Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace? <sup>30</sup>For we know him that hath said, Vengeance *belongeth* unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people. <sup>31</sup>*It is* a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.
13. The Old Testament law was exclusive—The New Testament law is inclusive of all people. Mark 16:15,16 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. <sup>16</sup>He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.
14. We are going to be judged by the words of Jesus. John 12:48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.
15. The mercy seat has been changed. Romans 3:25 Whom God hath set forth *to be* a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God. Hebrews 9:5 And over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercy seat; of which we cannot now speak particularly.
16. Takes away the kingdom. Zechariah 6:12,13 And speak unto him, saying, Thus speaketh the LORD of hosts, saying, Behold the man whose name *is* The BRANCH; and he shall grow up out of his place, and he shall build the temple of the LORD: <sup>13</sup>Even he shall build the temple of the LORD; and he shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon his throne; and he shall be a priest upon his throne: and the counsel of peace shall be between them both. Hebrews 8:4 For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law.

17. The Old Testament was nailed to the cross. Colossians 2:14-16 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; <sup>15</sup>And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it. <sup>16</sup>Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath *days*.
- B. If we understand the difference between the Old Testament and the New Testament, then certain problems will go away.
1. The eating of meats, 1 Tim. 4:1-4.
  2. The sabbath, Col. 2:14-16.
  3. Instrumental music, Eph. 5:19.
  4. The thief on the cross, Luke 23:39-45.
- C. There are those who claim that we are not under any law.
1. Hebrews 7:12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.
  2. Romans 4:15 Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, *there is* no transgression.
  3. Romans 5:13 For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law.
  4. 1 John 3:4 Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.
  5. Romans 8:2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.
  6. Galatians 6:2 Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ.
  7. James 1:25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth *therein*, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

8. Hebrews 5:8,9 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup>And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him.
9. Matthew 7:21-23 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.
10. Hebrews 1:1,2 God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, <sup>2</sup>Hath in these last days spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.

## VIII. FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING GOD.

- A. There is only one person in the Godhead.

**Jehovah's Witnesses:** "There was, therefore, a time when Jehovah was all alone in universal space. All life and energy and thought were contained in him alone....Then the time came when Jehovah began to create."<sup>3</sup>

**United Pentecostal:** "The Scriptures teach that the Godhead is comprised of one person (Jesus Christ) - not three, and that all who teach otherwise are false teachers and will be lost in hell."<sup>4</sup>

1. Arguments for only one person in the Godhead.
  - a. Isa. 43:10,11, I am the Lord.  
Acts 2:36, Lord and Christ.  
Therefore, God and Christ the same person.
  - b. Isa. 43:10,11, Beside me there is no Saviour.  
Matt. 1:21, Jesus is Saviour.  
Therefore, God and Jesus the same person.
  - c. Isa. 44:6, I am the first and the last, beside me there is no God.  
Rev. 1:8, Christ the alpha and the omega.

---

<sup>3</sup> Let God be true p. 25.

<sup>4</sup> Billy Lewis, The Lipe-Lewis Debate, (J. C. Choate Publications), p.1.

Therefore, God and Christ the same person.

- d. John 20:28, My Lord and my God.  
Thomas recognized Jesus as Lord and God.  
Therefore, God and Christ the same person.
- e. John 14:7,8, Philip said show us the Father.  
Jesus said, when you have seen me you have seen the Father.  
Therefore, Jesus and the Father are one.
- f. Exodus 3:13,14, God says He is the I am .  
John 8:56-59, Jesus says that He is the I am.  
Therefore, Jesus and the Father are one.
- g. Other misused scriptures.
  - 1) Deut. 4:35.
  - 2) Deut. 6:4.
  - 3) Deut. 32:39.
  - 4) 2 Sam. 7:22.
  - 5) 1 Chron. 17:20.
  - 6) Psa. 83:18.
  - 7) Psa. 86:10.
  - 8) Isa. 45:18.
  - 9) Mk. 12:29.
  - 10) 1 Cor. 8:4.
  - 11) Gal. 3:20.
  - 12) Eph. 4:6.
  - 13) Jas. 2:19.

## 2. Arguments for three persons in the Godhead.

- a. Scriptures which clearly show the usage of the word “one.”
- 1) Genesis 2:24 Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.
  - 2) Genesis 11:6 And the LORD said, Behold, the people *is* one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do.
  - 3) Gen. 41:1,5,25.
  - 4) 1 Kings 22:13 And the messenger that was gone to call Micaiah spake unto him, saying, Behold now, the words of the prophets *declare* good unto the king with one mouth: let thy word, I pray thee, be like the word of one of them, and speak *that which is* good.
  - 5) John 17:21,22 That they all may be one; as thou, Father, *art* in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. <sup>22</sup>And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one.
  - 6) Acts 4:32.
  - 7) 1 Cor. 3:8.
  - 8) Eph. 2:14.
  - 9) 1 Jn. 5:7.
- b. The “Oneness” doctrine contradicts the following passages:
- 1) 1 Corinthians 15:24 Then *cometh* the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.
  - 2) Acts 2:24 Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.

- 3) John 16:16 A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father.
- 4) John 1:18 No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared *him*.
- 5) John 4:34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.  
John 6:38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.
- 6) Luke 24:39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.
- 7) John 4:24 God *is* a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship *him* in spirit and in truth.
- 8) Hebrews 5:8-10 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup>And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him; <sup>10</sup>Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchizedek.
- 9) Hebrews 9:14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?
- 10) Hebrews 9:24 For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, *which are* the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us.
- 11) John 15:1 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.
- 12) John 12:49 For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.
- 13) John 16:13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not

speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.

- 14) Acts 7:55 But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God.
- 15) John 8:42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me.
- 16) Matthew 24:36 But of that day and hour knoweth no *man*, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.
- 17) Matthew 12:32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the *world* to come.
- 18) 1 Timothy 2:5 For *there is* one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.
- 19) Matthew 3:16,17 And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him:  
<sup>17</sup>And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.
- 20) John 14:31 But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.
- 21) John 14:28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come *again* unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I.

c. Passages that mention the Father and the Son.

- 1) Matthew 11:27 All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and *he* to whomsoever the Son will reveal *him*.
- 2) Mark 13:32 But of that day and *that* hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.
- 3) John 3:35 The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand.
- 4) John 5:20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel.
- 5) John 5:23 That all *men* should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.
- 6) Rom. 15:6.
- 7) 1 Cor. 1:3.
- 8) 1 Cor. 8:6.
- 9) 2 Cor. 1:3.
- 10) 2 Cor. 11:31.
- 11) Gal. 1:3.
- 12) Eph. 1:3.
- 13) Eph. 3:14.
- 14) Eph. 6:23.
- 15) Phil. 1:2.
- 16) Col. 1:3.
- 17) Col. 2:2.
- 18) 1 Thess. 1:1.
- 19) 2 Thess. 1:1.
- 20) 1 Tim. 1:2.
- 21) 2 Tim. 1:2.

- 22) Phile. 3.
- 23) 1 Jn. 2:22-24.
- 24) 2 Jn. 3.
- 25) 2 Jn. 9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.

d. Passages which mention all three in the Godhead:

- 1) 2 Corinthians 13:14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, *be* with you all. Amen.
- 2) Matthew 28:19 Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.
- 3) 1 John 5:7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.

e. Other statements and questions:

- 1) The Father of Jesus is (check the box in front of each true statement):
  - The Father.
  - The Son.
  - The Holy Spirit.
  - Jesus.
- 2) Did the Son make the worlds? Hebrews 1:2.
- 3) Whom did the Spirit hear in John 16:13?
- 4) If you should be saved when this life is over, will Jesus confess you before his Father which is in heaven?
- 5) From which nature did Jesus forgive sins in Mark chapter 2?

- 6) Is it correct to say that the Father and the Holy Spirit are two distinct manifestations of the one true God?
- 7) To whom did Jesus pray?
- 8) Who gave Jesus all authority?

B. Some teach that there are many gods.

**Mormon:** “And the Gods said among themselves: On the seventh time we will end our work, which we have counseled; and we will rest on the seventh time from all our work which we have counseled. And the Gods.....”<sup>5</sup>

C. Some teach that we can become gods.

**Mormon:** “After men have got their exaltations and their crowns - have become Gods,...they have the power then of propagating their species in spirit; and that is the first of their operations with regard to organizing a world.”<sup>6</sup>

D. Some teach that God was once a man.

**Mormon:** “Remember that God, our Heavenly Father, was perhaps once a child, and mortal like we ourselves and rose step by step in the scale of progress, in the school of advancement; has moved forward and overcome, until He has arrived at the point where He is now.”<sup>7</sup>

**Mormon:** “When our father Adam came into the garden of Eden, he came into it with a celestial body, and brought Eve, one of his wives, with him. He helped to make and organize this world. He is Michael, the archangel, the Ancient of Days! about whom holy men have written and spoken - He is our Father and our God, and the only God with whom we have to do.”<sup>8</sup>

**Mormon:** “God himself was once as we are now, and is an exalted man, and sits enthroned in yonder heavens!”<sup>9</sup>

E. Some teach that we cannot know for sure that God exists.

---

<sup>5</sup> Joseph Smith, The Pearl of Great Price, Book of Abraham 5:2,3.

<sup>6</sup> Brigham Young, Journal of Discourses, Volume 6, p. 275.

<sup>7</sup> Orson Hyde, Journal of Discourses Volume 1, p123.

<sup>8</sup> Brigham Young, Journal of Discourses, Volume 1, p. 50,51.

<sup>9</sup> Joseph Smith, History of the Church, Volume 6, p. 304-312.

1. Many religious people make this argument.
2. If we do not know that God exists, then:
  - a. We cannot know that we are saved.
  - b. We cannot know truth.
  - c. We cannot know the Bible is the inspired word of God.
  - d. We cannot know that there is one church.
  - e. Will God condemn those who do not believe in Him? Psalm 14:1 The fool hath said in his heart, *There is no God*.....
  - f. We cannot know absolute right and wrong.

## IX. FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING CHRIST.

- A. Some teach that Christ was created.

**Jehovah's Witnesses:** "Did you know that Jesus had a Glorious existence long before he was born as a human here on earth? The Bible informs us that he is God's 'firstborn' Son. This means that he was created before the other sons of God's family."<sup>10</sup>

1. Isaiah 43:10 *Ye are* my witnesses, saith the LORD, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I *am* he: before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me.
2. John 1:1-3 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup>The same was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup>All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

- B. Some deny the virgin birth.

1. Some ask, "How can a woman who has not known a man give birth to a child?"
2. Others state that Matthew is the only writer who mentions the virgin birth.

---

<sup>10</sup> The Truth that leads to Eternal Life, p. 47.

- a. Isaiah 7:14 Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.
- b. Luke 1:34,35 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? <sup>35</sup>And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.
- c. Galatians 4:4 But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law.
- d. Genesis 3:15 And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.
- e. Matthew 1:23 Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.

3. ***Christianity Today*** revealed the results of their survey of 10,000 Protestant ministers of which 7,441 responded. Here is one of the questions: Do you believe in the virgin Birth of Jesus Christ as a biological miracle?

- a. 60% of the Methodist ministers said, NO!
- b. 44% of the Episcopal priests said, NO!
- c. 49% of the Presbyterian ministers said, NO!
- d. 44% of the Baptist ministers said, NO!
- e. 19% of the American Lutheran ministers said, NO!

4. Notice: some religious leaders do not believe what the Bible teaches about Jesus.

C. Some say that Jesus was married.

**Mormon:** "It will be borne in mind that once on a time, there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and on a careful reading of that transaction, it

will be discovered that no less a person than Jesus Christ was married on that occasion. If he was ever married, his intimacy with Mary and Martha, and the other Mary also whom Jesus loved, must have been highly unbecoming and improper to say the best of it.”<sup>11</sup>

D. Jesus was not raised from the dead.

## X. FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE HOLY SPIRIT.

A. Some teach that the Holy Spirit is not a person.

**Jehovah’s Witnesses:** “Just as an invisible radio beam can carry information to you, so God’s invisible force directed the writers of the Bible to put down what he wanted mankind to know.”<sup>12</sup>

**Jehovah’s Witnesses:** “As for the ‘Holy Spirit’ the so-called ‘third Person of the Trinity,’ we have already seen that it is, not a person, but God’s active force.”<sup>13</sup>

Is the Holy Spirit a person?

1. Speaks and guides. John 16:13; 1 Timothy 4:1 Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.
2. Teaches. John 14:26 But the Comforter, *which is* the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.
3. Comforts. John 14:16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever.
4. Reproves and convicts. John 16:7,8 Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. <sup>8</sup>And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.

---

<sup>11</sup> Brigham Young, Journal of Discourses, Oct. 21, 1860. p. 259.

<sup>12</sup> The Truth that leads to Eternal Life, p. 8.

<sup>13</sup> The Truth that leads to Eternal Life, p. 24.

5. Testifies. John 15:26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me.
6. Forbids. Acts 16:6,7 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia, <sup>7</sup>After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.
7. Reveals and searches. 1 Corinthians 2:11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? *even* so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.
8. Has knowledge, 1 Cor. 2:11.
9. Has goodness. Nehemiah 9:20 Thou gavest also thy good spirit to instruct them, and withheldest not thy manna from their mouth, and gavest them water for their thirst.
10. Has a will. 1 Corinthians 12:11 But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.
11. Can be grieved. Ephesians 4:30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.
12. Can be despised. Hebrews 10:29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?
13. Can be blasphemed. Matthew 12:31 Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy *against* the *Holy* Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.
14. Can be lied to. Acts 5:3 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back *part* of the price of the land?
15. Can be resisted. Acts 7:51,52 Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers *did*, so *do* ye. <sup>52</sup>Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the com-

ing of the Just One; of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers.<sup>14</sup>

- B. Some teach that it takes a direct operation of the Holy Spirit for one to be saved. Objections to the direct operation of the Holy Spirit doctrine:
1. Eliminates the purpose and mission of the apostles. John 16:13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.
  2. Eliminates the gospel. Romans 1:16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.
  3. Eliminates the work of the church. Ephesians 3:10,11 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly *places* might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,  
<sup>11</sup>According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord. 1 Tim.3:15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.
  4. Eliminates the work of evangelists. 2 Tim. 4:1-5; 1 Cor. 1:21 For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe.
  5. Eliminates the New Testament, Heb. 9:16,17; Matt. 26:28.
  6. Eliminates obedience. Hebrews 5:8,9 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup>And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him.
  7. Eliminates true Biblical faith. Romans 10:17 So then faith *cometh* by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.
  8. Denies the all-sufficiency of the word. 2 Timothy 3:16,17 All scripture *is* given by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:  
<sup>17</sup>That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works. 1 Peter 1:23 Being born again, not of corruptible

---

<sup>14</sup> Roy J. Hearn, Class notes on the Holy Spirit. Ca. 1971.

seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

9. Rejects God's method of conversion. John 6:44,45 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. <sup>45</sup>It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.
10. Makes God a respecter of persons. Romans 2:11 For there is no respect of persons with God. 2 Peter 3:9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.
11. Contradicts Christ. Matthew 7:21-27 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. <sup>24</sup>Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: <sup>25</sup>And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. <sup>26</sup>And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: <sup>27</sup>And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.
12. Makes the word of God a dead letter. Hebrews 4:12 For the word of God *is* quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and *is* a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.
13. No light to the heathen without the Word. 2 Corinthians 4:3,4 But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: <sup>4</sup>In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.
14. Makes Satan's word more powerful than God's word.

15. Creates confusion and division. 1 Corinthians 1:10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and *that* there be no divisions among you; but *that* ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.
16. If true, how can one be judged by the word? John 12:48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.
17. No Bible authority for the theory. Colossians 3:17 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, *do* all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.<sup>15</sup>

C. How is one led by the Holy Spirit?

1. Rev. 2:1,7; 2:8,11; 2:12,17; 2:18,29.
2. Rev. 3:1,6; 3:7,13; 3:14,22
3. The Holy Spirit does not operate separate and apart from the word of God in conversion.
4. Where the word of God has not gone one will not find Christians.
5. Romans 1:16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.
6. John 6:44,45 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.<sup>45</sup> It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.
7. See Chart.

---

<sup>15</sup> Roy J. Hearn, Class notes on the Holy Spirit. Ca. 1971.

<b>Holy Spirit</b>	<b>Their Work</b>	<b>The Word</b>
Neh. 9:30	Instructs	2 Tim. 3:16,17
John 3:5	Begets	1 Cor. 4:15
John 3:5	Birth	1 Pet. 1:23
John 6:63	Quickens	Psalm 119:50
John 14:26	Teaches	John 6:44,45
John 16:8	Convicts	Titus 1:9
Acts 9:31	Comforts	1 Thess. 4:18
Rom. 5:5	Gives love	1 John 2:5
1 Cor. 6:11	Saves	Acts 11:14
1 Cor. 6:11	Washes	Eph. 5:26
1 Pet. 1:2	Sanctifies	John 17:17
Rom. 8:2	Makes free	John 8:32
John 16:7,8	Converts	Psa. 19:7
Eph. 3:16	Strengthens	Deut. 11:8
Eph. 5:19	Dwells	Col. 3:16
Rom. 8:14	Leads	Psa. 119:105 <sup>16</sup>

8. Luke 8:11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.
  9. Wayside hearer. Luke 8:12 Those by the way side are they that hear; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved.
    - a. Notice, the word was removed, not a direct operation of the Holy Spirit!
    - b. There is no example of one being saved by a direct operation of the Holy Spirit.
  10. The parable of the sower tells us that all results were produced by the word, the seed of the kingdom. Therefore, not by a direct operation of the Holy Spirit.
- D. Those claiming the direct operation of the Holy Spirit are most confused.
1. Some say one has to speak in tongues to be saved, while others say no.
  2. Some say there are three in the Godhead others say one.
  3. Some say it is right to have women preachers others say no.

---

<sup>16</sup> Roy J. Hearn, Class notes on the Holy Spirit. Ca. 1971.

4. Some say we ought to have modern day revelation others say no.

## XI. FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE BIBLE.

- A. Some believe that the Bible is not inspired.
- B. Some teach that the natural man cannot understand Bible.
  1. 2 Peter 1:20,21 Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. <sup>21</sup>For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as *they were* moved by the Holy Ghost.
  2. 1 Corinthians 2:14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know *them*, because they are spiritually discerned.
  3. Mark 16:15 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.
  4. Ephesians 3:1-4 For this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles, <sup>2</sup>If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given me to you-ward: <sup>3</sup>How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words, <sup>4</sup>Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ).
- C. Some teach that the alien sinner is not amenable to the Bible. Consider these true and false questions:
  - \_\_\_ 1. God joins together in marriage only those who have met His marriage laws as set forth in the New Testament.
  - \_\_\_ 2. It is proper to bind 1 Corinthians 7:2 on an alien sinner.
  - \_\_\_ 3. God disjoins only those who comply with His divorce laws as set forth in the New Testament.
  - \_\_\_ 4. All people who marry are bound both to his/her mate and to the law of God.
  - \_\_\_ 5. Billy Graham sins against the teachings of the New Testament in teaching that men are saved by faith only.

- \_\_\_ 6. The Bible teaches that if a man is subject to any part of a covenant, then he is subject to all of it.
- \_\_\_ 7. Joseph Smith sinned against the teachings of the New Testament by writing the book of Mormon.
- \_\_\_ 8. The law of the heart (all questions on the law of the heart are to be answered as per your understanding of Rom. 2:14,15) gives the positive qualifications for marriage, divorce and remarriage for alien sinners.
- \_\_\_ 9. All men (responsible people) are obligated to become Christians and glorify God through Christian living and worship.
- \_\_\_ 10. The law of the heart teaches that it is wrong to have more than one wife.
- \_\_\_ 11. The alien sinner can put away his wife for the cause of fornication and be right in the sight of God.
- \_\_\_ 12. If the alien sinner marries five wives (in harmony with civil law), then God joins all of those wives (alien sinners) to him (the alien sinner).
- \_\_\_ 13. I (John Doe) know that God will not join five wives (alien sinners) to one husband (alien sinner).
- \_\_\_ 14. When the gospel was taught to every creature in the first century, then every creature was amenable to the gospel. (Col. 1:23)
- \_\_\_ 15. The alien sinner who adds to, or takes from, God's word commits no sin in so doing.
- \_\_\_ 16. The law of Christ is retroactive to the alien sinner who is desirous of becoming a Christian.
- \_\_\_ 17. It would be sinful to make even one New Testament passage on marriage, divorce and remarriage retroactive on an alien sinner desiring to become a Christian.
- \_\_\_ 18. If one passage in the New Testament can be made retroactive on the alien sinner, then all can.
- \_\_\_ 19. If a man is ignorant of a law, then he has no obligation to keep it.

- \_\_20. An alien who puts away his mate for a cause other than fornication and marries again does not sin against the teachings of the New Testament.
- \_\_21. An alien sinner upset because the church has withdrawn from his mother bursts into a worship service and curses out the preacher, elders and members, but in so doing committed no sin.
- \_\_22. A responsible Jew (42 years of age) was amenable to the law of Moses if, and only if, he cared enough to learn it.
- \_\_23. An alien (42 years of age) today is amenable to the New Testament if, and only if, he cares enough to learn the law.
- \_\_24. Marriage (for the alien) is governed only by the law of the heart and civil law. (In other words, if one thinks in his heart he is married, and if the civil law says he is, then God is obligated to join the people together in marriage.)
- \_\_25. A church of Christ that teaches that homosexuals (aliens) sin against the teachings of the New Testament in being homosexuals is a church that teaches false doctrine and if it does not repent will be lost.
- \_\_26. A church of Christ that teaches that women (aliens) who abort children are women who sin against the teachings of the New Testament and therefore, is a church which teaches false doctrine and if it does not repent will be lost.
- \_\_27. An alien who encourages a Christian in a sinful act (murder) sins in so doing.
- \_\_28. An alien sinner who has read the Bible over and over is under no obligation to obey the gospel and partake of the Lord's Supper.
- \_\_29. Frank, a Christian, and his friend Joe (alien), both of whom attend the same congregation, decided that they were going to pervert the Lord's Supper, and in so doing only Frank sinned.
- \_\_30. If one lives in harmony with the law of his heart and kills another, and civil law does not condemn it, then no sin was committed. (Consider Saul of Tarsus.)

- \_\_\_31. All churches which teach that the alien sinner is under obligation to the teachings of the New Testament are churches which teach false doctrine and if they do not repent will be lost.
- \_\_\_32. Two aliens (man and woman) who feel in their hearts that it is not wrong to live together (and do so) do not violate civil law, and do not commit sin.
- \_\_\_33. A church of Christ that teaches that a woman (an alien) who preaches violates the teachings of the New Testament sins in teaching this, and if it does not repent will be lost.
- \_\_\_34. The law of the heart teaches that in a marriage of two aliens (man and woman) that the man is the head of the home.
- \_\_\_35. A church of Christ that teaches that the man is the head of the home in a marriage where two aliens are married, teaches false doctrine in applying these verses to alien sinners and will be lost if it does not repent.
- \_\_\_36. The law of the heart teaches the alien mother and father their child is to be brought up in the nurture and the admonition of the Lord.
- \_\_\_37. God has put all mothers and fathers under an obligation to bring their children up in the nurture and the admonition of the Lord.
- \_\_\_38. A church of Christ that teaches aliens that they have a God-given obligation to bring their children up in the nurture and the admonition of the Lord is a church which sins, and if it does not repent will be lost.
- \_\_\_39. An alien sinner is under a God-given obligation to obey the laws of the land.
- \_\_\_40. The law of the heart teaches man that one must obey the laws of the land.
- \_\_\_41. The alien, who dies an alien, will be judged by the laws of the heart judgment day.
- \_\_\_42. The alien, who dies an alien, will be judged by the words of Christ judgment day.

- \_\_\_43. A church of Christ that teaches the alien that he must obey the laws of the land, (those in harmony with God's law) because this is what the New Testament binds on all men, sins in teaching this and if it does not repent will be lost.
- \_\_\_44. An alien who put away his mate for a reason other than fornication and marries another has God's approval in this matter for God will join him together with his new mate.
- \_\_\_45. A Christian who puts away his Christian mate for a reason other than fornication and marries another has God's approval in this matter for God will join him together with his new mate.
- \_\_\_46. A Christian (being innocent) who puts away his mate for the cause of fornication and marries another (qualified to be married) has God's approval in this matter for He will join him together with his new mate.
- \_\_\_47. An alien who cheats on his income taxes commits no sin against the teachings of the New Testament.
- \_\_\_48. There is Bible authority for a Christian (being innocent) to put away his mate (alien) for the cause of fornication and marry again.
- \_\_\_49. All aliens who do not obey the gospel will go to hell.
- \_\_\_50. All churches of Christ who bind on aliens the New Testament doctrine of hell are churches who teach error and if they do not repent will be lost.
- \_\_\_51. I (John Doe) tell the Baptist that I am trying to teach that he is not amenable to the teachings of the New Testament.
- \_\_\_52. If a Baptist asks me (John Doe) if he sins in using instrumental music in worship to God, I tell him no, because he is not amenable to the New Testament.
- \_\_\_53. All churches of Christ that teach that the Baptist church sins in using instrumental music in worship to God are churches that sin for binding the New Testament on aliens, and if they do not repent will be lost.
- \_\_\_54. Only Christians can teach doctrines contrary to the New Testament and be held accountable.

- \_\_55. All alien sinners who teach doctrines contrary to the New Testament (partaking of the Lord's Supper on Thursday night) are people who violate New Testament law in so doing, thus commit sin.
- \_\_56. If I (Wesley Simons) can prove to you (John Doe) that you will make part of the law of Christ retroactive, then you will give up your false view on this matter.
- \_\_57. Any person (and he has had knowledge of this for years) who attends a church of Christ and binds the New Testament on all people, sins in so doing.
- \_\_58. If two aliens (husband and wife) come to me (John Doe) arguing over who is the head of the house, I will gladly tell them that the New Testament does not address this issue - for they are aliens.
- \_\_59. I (John Doe) am amenable to all of the New Testament in some since.
- \_\_60. I (John Doe) am amenable to all of the Old Testament law as a tool from which to learn. (Rom. 15:4)
- \_\_61. A man can be amenable to an entire body of law without having the same relationship or accountability to each individual law. (Consider the constitution of the USA.)
- \_\_62. The New Testament teaches that all who violate the law of the heart will be lost in a devil's hell.
- \_\_63. The New Testament clearly teaches that there is such a thing as the law of the heart.
- \_\_64. If a gainsayer (alien) teaches that which is contrary to New Testament law, then we are under a God-given obligation to stand against him, but also to teach him that he is not amenable to that which he has perverted.
- \_\_65. A Christian married to an alien who becomes a homosexual may put that mate away for the cause of fornication and marry another who is qualified.
- \_\_66. There is sometimes a conflict between the law of the heart and the teachings of the New Testament.
- \_\_67. Every law of the New Testament is covered by the blood of Christ.

- \_\_68. Every law in the law of the heart is covered by the blood of Christ.
- \_\_69. If there is a conflict between the law of the heart and the law of Christ, and if the alien sinner keeps the law of the heart and ignores the law of Christ, then he has sinned by adding to the blood-covered law of Christ.
- \_\_70. It would be right (in the sight of God) for a government composed of all aliens to pass a law that one could divorce and remarry for any reason.
- \_\_71. The law makers of America will have to give an account judgment day for passing laws that allow people to divorce and remarry for any reason.
- \_\_72. Alien sinners have a God-given obligation to seek God.
- \_\_73. All men have the same body of truth in the law of the heart.
- \_\_74. An alien sinner can live and die a Baptist and the fact that he was a Baptist would not be sinful.
- \_\_75. Madalyn Murray O'Hare sins when she declares the Bible to be "a bunch of garbage that needs to be burned."
- \_\_76. Marriage is a spiritual blessing and is located in Christ.
- \_\_77. A church of Christ involved in benevolence has an alien come to them who will not work, but asks for help. The church refuses to help him by applying 1 Tim. 5:8, and in so doing commits sin.
- \_\_78. In the case where two aliens are married, their marriage does not become "holy" until at least one of them becomes a Christian.
- \_\_79. All people whom God has not joined together in marriage sin if they have sex.
- \_\_80. All aliens who will not honor their mother and father sin against what the Bible teaches on this point.
- \_\_81. Two homosexuals (aliens) who believe with all their heart they were born that way, and feel that they cannot change their sexual preference, commit sin.

- \_\_82. If a thing is said to be against nature, then all responsible people in their own hearts will automatically understand the thing to be sin.
- \_\_83. Sometimes a man might have do those things which go against his own heart's desire to be pleasing to God.
- \_\_84. A man could live in total harmony with the law of the heart and be saved.
- \_\_85. I (John Doe) first became a sinner because I violated New Testament law.
- \_\_86. The New Testament says that the law of the heart can be violated.
- \_\_87. The law of the heart and natural revelation are two different things.
- \_\_88. The Jews who persecuted Paul in the first century sinned.
- \_\_89. A Jew in the first century could deny the Christ and His words without committing sin.
- \_\_90. Elymas sinned against the teachings of the New Testament in trying to turn the deputy from the faith. (Acts 13:8)
- \_\_91. The Catholic church sins against the teachings of the New Testament in praying to Mary.
- \_\_92. A church withdraws from a brother for being a homosexual, an alien sinner takes up for the homosexual and slanders the Lord's church in the local newspaper. I (John Doe) declare that the alien committed no sin in so doing.
- \_\_93. God will not join two aliens (male and female), who are both eligible, in marriage.
- \_\_94. In 1 Corinthians 5, a man had his father's wife - he sinned. It appears that the woman was not a member of the Lord's church, but she still sinned against the teachings of the New Testament.
- \_\_95. When I see the people of Hollywood (aliens) divorcing and remarrying over and over (for any reason), then I can truthfully tell my children this is pleasing to God.

\_\_96. The Stoney Creek church of Christ is a congregation that teaches false doctrine on marriage, divorce and remarriage and needs to be marked if it will not repent.

\_\_97. The alien sinner sins when he takes God's name in vain.

\_\_98. The alien sinner who involves himself in social drinking sins.

\_\_99. When I see the people in Hollywood (aliens) divorcing and remarrying over and over again (for any reason), then I can truthfully tell my children that these people have sinned personally against the teachings of the New Testament.

D. The Catholics gave us the Bible.

1. Matthew 24:35 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.
2. 1 Peter 1:25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.
3. Where was the Catholic church when the Old Testament was being written? How did these books become canonical?
4. Where was the Catholic church when the New Testament was being written? How did these books become canonical?
5. The books of the Bible are canonical because they are inspired! And no church gives inspiration—the Holy Spirit does!
6. Can the average person tell that there is a difference between the book of Matthew and the Sears catalog?

## XII. FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE NATURE OF MAN.

A. Some teach that a baby is born in sin.

**Nazarene:** "We believe that original sin, or depravity, is that corruption of the nature of all offspring of Adam by reason of which everyone is very far gone from original righteousness or the pure state of our first parents at the time of their creation, is averse to God, is without spiritual life, and inclined to evil, and that continually. We further believe that original sin con-

tinues to exist with the new life of the regenerate, until eradicated by the baptism with the Holy Spirit.”<sup>17</sup>

**Jehovah’s Witnesses:** “Thus his (Adam’s) offspring inherited sin and death from him.”<sup>18</sup>

1. What this doctrine does to eliminate the implanting of the Word:
  - a. Attacks the very nature of man.
  - b. It destroys man’s free will.
  - c. It makes the Bible powerless.
  - d. It makes the direct operation of the Holy Spirit a must.
  - e. It makes the Holy Spirit a respecter of persons.
2. False doctrines which have grown out of total hereditary depravity:
  - a. Direct operation of the Holy Spirit.
  - b. The immaculate conception.

**Catholic:** “The third prerogative of the blessed virgin is her Immaculate Conception. Not only was she free from the slightest stain of actual sin, but by a singular miracle or divine grace she also was free from original sin, with which all the other children of Adam are born into this world. For it was eminently fitting that she who was destined to be the mother of Christ, who was to give him flesh of her flesh and blood of her blood, should be undefiled by even that slight shadow of Adam’s fall.”<sup>19</sup>

- c. Infant baptism.

**Calvinism:** “When Origen testifies that infants were baptized for the remission of sins, does he not clearly testify that infants were baptized, as that they were baptized for the remission of sins?”<sup>20</sup>

---

<sup>17</sup> Manual of the Church of the Nazarene, (Kansas City: Nazarene Publishing House, 1968) p. 29.

<sup>18</sup> The Truth that leads to Eternal Life, p. 32.

<sup>19</sup> John A. O’Brien, The Faith of Millions, (Huntington, Ind.,: Our Sunday Visitor, 1938) pp. 459, 460.

<sup>20</sup> N.L. Rice, Campbell-Rice Debate, (Lexington, Kentucky: A..T. Skillman & Son, 1844) p.417.

- d. Free moral agency denied.
    - 1) They declare that a man is so depraved that he cannot do one thing good.
    - 2) They claim that the alien sinner cannot do one thing to pursue God.
    - 3) They say a dead man cannot do anything.
  - e. The natural man (one not born again) cannot understand the word of God.
  - f. Once saved always saved.
3. Verses misused to try and prove this false doctrine:
- a. Psalm 14:2,3 The LORD looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, *and* seek God. 3 They are all gone aside, they are *all* together become filthy: *there is* none that doeth good, no, not one.
  - b. Psalm 51:5 Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.
  - c. Psalm 58:3 The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies.
  - d. Ephesians 2:3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.
4. Bible answers.
- a. Genesis 8:21 And the LORD smelled a sweet savor; and the LORD said in his heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man's sake; for the imagination of man's heart *is* evil from his youth; neither will I again smite any more every thing living, as I have done.

- b. Acts 17:28 For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring.
- c. Ezekiel 18:20 The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him.
- d. Matthew 18:3 And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.
- e. 2 Samuel 12:23 But now he is dead, wherefore should I fast? can I bring him back again? I shall go to him, but he shall not return to me.

B. Some teach that man does not have a soul.

**Jehovah's Witnesses:** "We see, then, that the human soul is the person himself, and when the person dies it is the human soul that dies."<sup>21</sup>

**Jehovah's Witnesses:** "Thus we see that the claim of religionists that man has an immortal soul, and therefore differs from the beast is not scriptural... There is not one text in the Bible that states the human soul is immortal."<sup>22</sup>

1. There are those who contend that man does not have a soul.
2. They misuse certain verses to try to establish this false doctrine.
  - a. Gen. 2:15-17, "Thou shalt surely die" they say proves man to be wholly mortal.
  - b. Gen. 3:19, "Dust thou art and to dust shalt thou return" proves man does not have a soul, they say.
  - c. Gen. 7:21,22, "all flesh in whose nostrils was the breath of life died in the flood." Therefore, they conclude, that man is wholly mortal.

---

<sup>21</sup> The Truth that leads to Eternal Life, p. 37.

<sup>22</sup> Let God Be True, p.59,60.

- d. Gen. 37:35, Jacob said that he would, "Go down into the grave unto my son mourning."
- e. Joshua 10:28,29, "Destroyed the souls therein..."
- f. Job 34:14,15 If he set his heart upon man, *if* he gather unto himself his spirit and his breath; <sup>15</sup>All flesh shall perish together, and man shall turn again unto dust.
- g. Psalm 16:10 For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.
- h. Psalm 22:29 All *they that be* fat upon earth shall eat and worship: all they that go down to the dust shall bow before him: and none can keep alive his own soul.
- i. Ecclesiastes 9:5 For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not any thing, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten. Eccl. 9:10 Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do *it* with thy might; for *there is* no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest.
- j. Ezekiel 18:4 Behold, all souls are mine; as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is mine: the soul that sinneth, it shall die.
- k. Matthew 10:28 And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

3. The Bible answer.

- a. Acts 17:28,29 For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. <sup>29</sup>Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device.
- b. Hebrews 12:9 Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected *us*, and we gave *them* reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?

- c. 1 Thessalonians 5:23 And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and *I pray God* your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.
- d. 1 Corinthians 2:11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.
- e. Zechariah 12:1 The burden of the word of the LORD for Israel, saith the LORD, which stretcheth forth the heavens, and layeth the foundation of the earth, and formeth the spirit of man within him.
- f. Acts 9:39 Then Peter arose and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them.
- g. Ecclesiastes 12:7 Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it.
- h. John 11:26 And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?
- i. 2 Corinthians 4:16 For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward *man* is renewed day by day.
- j. Daniel 7:15 I Daniel was grieved in my spirit in the midst of *my* body, and the visions of my head troubled me.
- k. Genesis 35:18 And it came to pass, as her soul was in departing, (for she died) that she called his name Benoni: but his father called him Benjamin.
- l. 1 Peter 1:3,4 Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, <sup>4</sup>To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you.

C. Some teach theistic evolution. (The Pope has endorsed theistic evolution.)

1. There is no theistic statement which shows theistic evolution to be true.
2. Theistic evolution is wrong because the Bible says Adam was the first man, Gen. 2:7,8.
3. Theistic evolution is wrong because it cannot explain Eve, Gen. 2:22.
4. Theistic evolution is wrong because it cannot explain where man acquired his soul, Matt. 10:28; 16:26.
5. Theistic evolution is wrong because it logically denies the fall of man, Gen. 3.
6. Theistic evolution is wrong because the Bible teaches catastrophism; evolution teaches uniformitarianism, Gen. 6.
7. Theistic evolution is wrong because the Bible states that the heavens, the earth, the seas, and all that is in them were created in six days, Ex. 20:8-11.
8. Theistic evolution is wrong because it makes a liar out of Jesus the Savior, and His inspired writers, Matt. 19:3-5.
9. Theistic evolution is wrong because the Bible says everything brings forth after its own kind, <sup>23</sup> Gen. 1:11,12,21,24,25.

D. Man is not a free moral agent.

1. Deuteronomy 1:39 Moreover your little ones, which ye said should be a prey, and your children, which in that day had no knowledge between good and evil, they shall go in thither, and unto them will I give it, and they shall possess it.
2. Psalm 106:37,38 Yea, they sacrificed their sons and their daughters unto devils, <sup>38</sup>And shed innocent blood, *even* the blood of their sons and of their daughters, whom they sacrificed unto the idols of Canaan: and the land was polluted with blood.
3. Joshua 24:15 And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that *were* on the other side of the flood, or the

---

<sup>23</sup> Bert Thompson, Class Notes, ca. 1980.

gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD.

4. Isaiah 7:15,16 Butter and honey shall he eat, that he may know to refuse the evil, and choose the good. <sup>16</sup>For before the child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good, the land that thou abhorrest shall be forsaken of both her kings.
5. Matthew 18:3 And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.
6. Romans 7:9 For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.
7. Matthew 23:37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not!
8. Proverbs 1:29 For that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the LORD.
9. Revelation 22:17 And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.
10. John 5:40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.
11. Acts 13:46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.
12. Romans 6:16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?
13. Deuteronomy 1:39 Moreover your little ones, which ye said should be a prey, and your children, which in that day had no knowledge between good and evil, they shall go in thither, and unto them will I give it, and they shall possess it.

### **XIII. FALSE DOCTRINES OF CALVINISM.**

- A Total hereditary depravity.

**Calvinism:** “The depraved sinner cannot act except by enabling grace of God through the Spirit.”<sup>24</sup>

**Calvinism:** “...Positively inclined to evil; and therefore under just condemnation to eternal ruin, without defense or excuse.”<sup>25</sup>

1. Do you believe in the immaculate conception?
2. Was Jesus a sinner? Hebrews 4:15 For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as *we are*, yet without sin.
3. Was Jesus one who inherited sin?
4. Was Jesus tempted in all points like as we are? Heb. 4:15.
5. Were Adam and Eve persons who inherited sin?
6. What happens to little babies who die having inherited sin?
7. Is there a way the little babies can get rid of such sins?
8. Can one die in sin and expect to go to heaven?
9. Were Adam and Eve tempted in the same fashion as we?
10. Were Cain and Abel tempted in the same fashion as their parents?
11. Is Adam’s sin and its consequences more far reaching than Christ’s sacrifice and its blessings?
12. Will inherited sin condemn a person?
13. What is sin? 1 John 3:4; James 4:17.
14. Did Mary, the mother of Jesus, inherit sin?
15. What does Ezekiel 18:20 mean? Ezekiel 18:20 The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him.

---

<sup>24</sup> Ben Bogard, Total Depravity, p.13.

<sup>25</sup> J.M. Pendleton, Art. 3, in Church Manual designed for Baptist Churches.

16. Is God more fair in physical or spiritual matters?
17. Who was the first totally depraved person?
18. How does God change the totally depraved person?
19. Can a totally depraved person understand the Bible? Eph. 3:1-5; 1 Cor. 3:1-3.
20. Can a totally depraved person learn how to do brain surgery?
21. How did you learn that you were totally depraved?
22. Could you teach a totally depraved person that he is totally depraved and get him to understand it?
23. If not #22, how can he be held accountable?
24. If yes to #22, then could not he understand the word of God, if the word of God teaches total hereditary depravity?
25. Would you read the Bible to a totally depraved person?
26. How would you go about trying to get a baby forgiven of total hereditary depravity?
27. Did John the Baptist inherit sin?
28. Did John the Baptist receive the Holy Spirit in his mother's womb?
29. What is the difference between lying with their so-called "depraved nature" and lying without that nature?
30. Will I be held accountable for what my mother did?

B. Unconditional election.

**Calvinism:** "By the decree of God, for the manifestation of His glory, some men and angels are predestinated unto everlasting life, and others fore-ordained to everlasting death. <sup>26</sup>

**Calvinism:** "Those of mankind that are predestinated unto life, God, before the foundation of the world was laid, according to His eternal and

---

<sup>26</sup> Westminster Confession of Faith, Chap. III:III.

immutable purpose, and the secret counsel and good pleasure of His will, hath chosen, in Christ, unto everlasting glory, out of His mere free grace and love, without any foresight of faith of good works, or perseverance in either of them, of any other thing in the creature, as conditions, or causes moving Him thereunto: and all to the praise of His glorious grace.”<sup>27</sup>

1. Is God a respecter of persons? Acts 10:34,35 Then Peter opened *his* mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: <sup>35</sup>But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.
2. Can I commit adultery with every woman in Bristol and still go to heaven?
3. Can one disobey God and be saved? 2 Thessalonians 1:6-9 Seeing *it is* a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; <sup>7</sup>And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, <sup>8</sup>In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>9</sup>Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power. Hebrews 5:8,9 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup>And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him.
4. Why was one thief on the cross lost and the other saved?
5. Is it possible to believe you are among the elect and still be lost? Matt. 7:21-23.
6. If I am lost, whose fault is it?
7. If I am saved, why?
8. Can I change from a lost state to a saved one in this life?
9. Were you a believer or an unbeliever first?
10. Are you among the elect?
11. How do you know that you are among the elect?
12. When was your name placed in the book of life?

---

<sup>27</sup> Westminster Confession of Faith, Chap. III:V.

13. How does one make his calling and election sure?
14. Does God want everyone to be saved? 2 Peter 3:9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to usward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.
15. Is foreseen faith (obedience) the cause of God's election?
16. Are works and God's grace mutually exclusive in every case?
17. Does grace cease to be grace if one does something to obtain his salvation?
18. Does God hate some people even before they are capable of doing good? Romans 9:13 As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.
19. Does God hate some people before they sin personally? Romans 9:13.
20. Does sin cause God to hate all men's sinful actions equally?
21. Is salvation by grace only?
22. Were Adam and Eve ever in a saved condition?
23. After they committed sin were they lost or saved?
24. If Adam and Eve had not eaten of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, would they have been in a saved condition?
25. Can election and preserving grace be severed? What about Adam and Eve?

C. Limited atonement.

**Calvinism:** "Christ died only for the elect. Otherwise, he wasted his blood."<sup>28</sup>

**Calvinism:** "When the Calvinist uses the term *limited*, he does not mean that the atonement is limited in its power to save... But he does believe that the unlimited atonement of Christ is limited in its scope, that Christ in-

---

<sup>28</sup> Caller, on the Arise To Truth radio program.

tended to and actually did remove the guilt of the sins of a limited number of people — namely, those whom God has loved with a special love from eternity.”<sup>29</sup>

1. Does God want all people to be saved? 2 Peter 3:9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that should come to repentance.
2. Did Jesus die for all men? Hebrews 2:9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.
3. For whom did Jesus die? John 3:16.
4. What does the word “world” mean in John 3:16?
5. Is God a respecter of persons? Acts 10:34,35 Then Peter opened *his* mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: <sup>35</sup>But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.
6. Did Jesus die for any that will be lost? John 17:12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled; 2 Peter 2:1 But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.
7. Must the elect do any thing for the atonement to bless them? John 3:16.
8. Can the elect refuse the atonement and still be saved? Heb 5:8,9.
9. Can one seek God and still be lost because Christ did not die for them?
10. Did Christ die for you?
11. Die Christ die for me?

---

<sup>29</sup> Edwin Palmer, The Five Points of Calvinism, Baker Book House, Grand Rapids, Mich., p.42.

12. How do you know the answers to questions number 10 and 11?
13. Did the cross benefit all mankind in any way?
14. Did the Christ die for Judas Iscariot? John 17:12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.
15. Did the Christ die for the people in Matt. 7:21-23?
16. Did Christ die for the rich man in Luke 16:19ff?
17. Of all the judgment scenes in the Bible, is anyone condemned because Christ did not die for them?
18. Did Christ die for the non-elect babies?
19. Did Christ die for the non-elect mentally retarded?
20. Did Christ die for the church? Acts 20:28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.
21. Will all in the church be saved?
22. Did Christ die for the ungodly? Romans 5:8,9 But God commended his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. <sup>9</sup>Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.
23. If I am lost, whose fault is it?
24. Why did the Lord extend an invitation to all people? Matthew 11:28-30 Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. <sup>29</sup>Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. <sup>30</sup>For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.
25. Were Adam and Eve among those covered by the limited atonement before they sinned?

D. Irresistible grace.

**Calvinism:** “These angels and men, thus predestinated and foreordained, are particularly and unchangeably designed; and their number is so certain and definite, that it cannot be either increased or diminished.”<sup>30</sup>

1. If one were among the elect, but wanted to be lost, could he?
2. If one were among the lost, but wanted to be saved, could he?
3. Is God's grace extended to all men?
4. Can one be saved without the grace of God?
5. If I cannot not be saved without the grace of God, and if His grace has not been extended to me, then whose fault is it if I am lost?
6. Have you received the irresistible grace of God?
7. How do you know?
8. Is God's irresistible grace miraculously or non-miraculously given to a person?
9. Are we saved by grace alone?
10. Can one believe that he has this grace and still be lost? Matt. 7:21-23.
11. Is there any connection between God's grace and doing something to acquire it? Titus 2:11,12 For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men,<sup>12</sup> Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world.
12. Where is the grace of God located? 2 Timothy 2:1 Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.
13. When was God's grace extended to the elect?
14. What does Ephesians 2:8,9 mean?
15. What does Titus 2:11,12 mean?
16. Can one be elected and yet not receive the grace of God?

---

<sup>30</sup> Westminster Confession of Faith, Chap. III:IV.

17. Are all who are in Christ (thus, grace covered) going to be saved?
18. What does Galatians 5:4 mean?
19. Does the gospel (the preaching thereof) have anything to do with one's receiving the grace of God? Romans 1:16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

E. Perseverance of the saints.

**Calvinism:** "They, whom God hath accepted in His Beloved, effectually called, and sanctified by His Spirit, can neither totally, nor finally, fall away from the state of grace: but shall persevere therein to the end, and be eternally saved."<sup>31</sup>

1. Can the elect "hate" God and be saved? Romans 11:28 As concerning the gospel, *they are* enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, *they are* beloved for the fathers' sakes.
2. Can the elect practice the works of the flesh and still be saved? Galatians 5:19-21 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are *these*; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness,<sup>20</sup> Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,<sup>21</sup> Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revelings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told *you* in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.
3. Could an elect person change his destiny if he so desired?
4. Is there any connection between keeping God's commandments and going to heaven? 1 John 2:3,4 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. <sup>4</sup>He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.
5. How will man be judged on judgment day? 2 Corinthians 5:10 For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things *done* in *his* body, according to that he hath done, whether *it be* good or bad.

---

<sup>31</sup> Westminster Confession of Faith, Chap. XVII:I.

6. Can one's name be removed from the Lamb's book of life? Rev. 22: 18,19 For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: <sup>19</sup>And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and *from* the things which are written in this book.
7. Can one fall from grace? Galatians 5:4 Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.
8. In God's sight, is sin worse before being elected or after?
9. Was Judas Iscariot one of the elect? John 17:12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.
10. Did he (Judas) fall from the grace of God?
11. What separates man from God? Isaiah 59:1,2 Behold, the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: <sup>2</sup>But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid *his* face from you, that he will not hear.
12. Can Christians sin? 1 John 1:8-2:1.
13. What does James 5:19,20 mean? 19 Brethren, if any of you do err from the truth, and one convert him; <sup>20</sup>Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.
14. What does 2 Peter 2:20-22 mean? 20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. <sup>21</sup>For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known *it*, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. <sup>22</sup>But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog *is* turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

15. If one was given salvation from the foundation of the world by God, why would he need to be preserved?
16. Is perseverance of angels true? Jude 6 And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day; 2 Peter 2:4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast *them* down to hell, and delivered *them* into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment.
17. What does 1 Corinthians 9:27 mean? Cf. Luke 9:25.
18. Is it necessary for a saint to be subject to God?
19. Are you among the preserved?
20. How do you know?

#### XIV. FALSE DOCTRINES ON THE PLAN OF SALVATION.

- A. That we are saved by “faith only.”

**Methodist:** “We are accounted righteous before God only for the merit of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, by faith, and not for our own works or deservings. Wherefore, that we are justified by faith only is a most wholesome doctrine and very full of comfort.” <sup>32</sup>

**Baptist:** “The Scriptures teach that faith in Christ procures salvation without any further acts of obedience.” <sup>33</sup>

1. The denominational world uses one verse after another that says that a man is saved by faith and they read the word “only” into it. Cf. John 3:16; Rom. 5:1; Heb. 11:6; John 11:25,26; Acts 16:30,31, etc.
2. The word faith, or belief, used three ways:
  - a. Faith, or belief, used as personal faith.
    - 1) Woman of Syrophencia: Matthew 15:28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great *is* thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

---

<sup>32</sup> Methodist Discipline, Paragraph 69.

<sup>33</sup> L. S. Ballard, Warren -Ballard Debate, (Henderson, TN. , Arnold Office Supply, 1953.) p. 3.

- 2) Disciples in storm: Matthew 8:26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm.
  - 3) Centurion's faith: Luke 7:9 When Jesus heard these things, he marveled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.
- b. Faith (speaking of the system of faith ).
- 1) Galatians 3:23-25 But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. <sup>24</sup>Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster *to bring us* unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. <sup>25</sup>But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.
  - 2) Ephesians 4:5 One Lord, one faith, one baptism.
  - 3) Jude 3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort *you* that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.
- c. Faith (obedience ).
- 1) John 3:16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.
  - 2) Numbers 20:10-12 And Moses and Aaron gathered the congregation together before the rock, and he said unto them, Hear now, ye rebels; must we fetch you water out of this rock? <sup>11</sup>And Moses lifted up his hand, and with his rod he smote the rock twice: and the water came out abundantly, and the congregation drank, and their beasts *also*. <sup>12</sup>And the LORD spake unto Moses and Aaron, Because ye believed me not, to sanctify me in the eyes of the children of Israel, therefore ye shall not bring this congregation into the land which I have given them.

3) Romans 10:13-16 For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. <sup>14</sup>How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? <sup>15</sup>And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! <sup>16</sup>But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report?

3. Verses which answer the “faith only” doctrine.

a. John 12:42,43 Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: <sup>43</sup>For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

b. James 2:19-26 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. <sup>20</sup>But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? <sup>21</sup>Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? <sup>22</sup>Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? <sup>23</sup>And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. <sup>24</sup>Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. <sup>25</sup>Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent *them* out another way? <sup>26</sup>For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

c. 1 Corinthians 13:1-3 Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal. <sup>2</sup>And though I have *the gift of* prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing. <sup>3</sup>And though I bestow all my goods to feed *the poor*, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

- d. 2 Peter 1:5 And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge.
- e. Galatians 5:6 For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love.
- f. Romans 1:5 By whom we have received grace and apostleship, for obedience to the faith among all nations, for his name: Romans 16:26 But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith.
- g. Hebrews 11.
  - 1) By faith Abel offered, v4.
  - 2) By faith Noah moved...and prepared, v7.
  - 3) By faith Abraham obeyed; and he went out, v8.
  - 4) By faith he (Abraham) looked for a city, v10.
  - 5) By faith Abraham offered up Isaac, v17.
  - 6) By faith Moses refused, v24.
  - 7) By faith he (Moses) chose to suffer affliction, v25.
  - 8) By faith he (Moses) forsook Egypt, v27.
  - 9) Through faith he (Moses) kept the Passover, v28.
  - 10) By faith Israel passed through the Red Sea, v29.
  - 11) By faith the walls of Jericho fell after they were compassed about seven days, v30.
  - 12) By faith Rahab perished not after receiving the spies, v31.
  - 13) In view of the aforementioned verses, how should one understand: Hebrews 11:6 But without faith *it is im-*

possible to please *him*: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and *that* he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

- h. Romans 6:17,18 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you. <sup>18</sup>Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.
- i. Hebrews 5:8,9 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup>And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him.
- j. 2 Thessalonians 1:7,8 And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, <sup>8</sup>In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.
- k. Matthew 23:23 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier *matters* of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

B. That we are saved by “grace only.”

- 1. If we are saved by grace only, then all men will be saved. Because this means that God does everything and we do nothing.
- 2. However, we know that all men will not be saved. Therefore, we know that men are not saved by grace only. This means that man has a part in his salvation.
- 3. Titus 2:11,12 For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, <sup>12</sup>Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world.
- 4. Saving grace is located: 2 Timothy 2:1 Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.
- 5. One has to do something to get into Christ.

- a. Believe, Rom. 10:9,10.
  - b. Repent, Luke 13:3,5.
  - c. Confess Christ, Matt. 10:32,33.
  - d. Be baptized into Christ, Rom. 6:3,4; Gal. 3:27-29.
6. If we are saved by grace only, then the rich young ruler was saved even though he walked away from the Lord, Mark 10:17-22.
7. If we are saved by grace only, then Judas Iscariot will be saved. John 17:12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.
8. Verses which prove that we are not saved by grace only:
- a. Matthew 25:41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels. Matthew 25:46 And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.
  - b. Galatians 5:19-21 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are *these*; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, <sup>20</sup>Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, <sup>21</sup>Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revelings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told *you* in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.
  - c. 1 Corinthians 6:9,10 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, <sup>10</sup>Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.
  - d. Matthew 7:21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.
  - e. Revelation 21:8 But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sor-

cerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

C. Baptism is not essential to salvation.

**Baptist:** “Baptism may not be essential to salvation, but is essential to obedience.”<sup>34</sup>

**Baptist:** “There is not one passage in the Bible that teaches that baptism is necessary for salvation.”<sup>35</sup>

**Baptist:** “It is, however, a witness and a testimony to the covenant, since it is naturally and properly the first Christian act of the believer after exercise of saving faith.”<sup>36</sup>

**Baptist:** “We believe the Bible teaches baptism does not save anyone. We are convinced God’s Word teaches no form of baptism saves, or has any part of salvation.”<sup>37</sup>

**Mennonite:** “Although baptism is a most meaningful symbol and the rite for admission to the church, and although it is based upon solemn vows, yet it is not an end in itself, nor is salvation dependent upon it.”<sup>38</sup>

1. They contend that baptism is an outward sign of an inward grace. The question is, where does the Bible teach this?
2. They also state that one has to be baptized to be a member of their denomination, but that one does not have to be baptized to go to heaven.
3. They also confess that baptism is a commandment, but not essential to salvation.
4. They also believe that if one has to be baptized to be saved, then he is trying to work his way to heaven.

---

<sup>34</sup> Edward T. Hiscox, The Hiscox guide for Baptist Churches, (The Judson Press. Valley Forge, PA., 1964). p. 87.

<sup>35</sup> Joe T. Odle, Church Members Handbook, (Broadman Press: Nashville, TN. ). p. 18.

<sup>36</sup> Edward T. Hiscox, The Hiscox guide for Baptist Churches, (The Judson Press. Valley Forge, PA., 1964) p. 83.

<sup>37</sup> Richard U. Alvarez, In a letter to Don Crum, (From Jerry Falwell & The Old Time Gospel Hour). Feb. 4, 1981.

<sup>38</sup> Mennonite General Conference, Aug., 26, 1955.

- a. Naaman, 2 Kings 5:1ff.
  - b. The blind man in John 9ff.
  - c. Noah in Gen. 6ff.
5. Consider these verses:
- a. John 3:3-5 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. <sup>4</sup>Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? <sup>5</sup>Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
    - 1) They say this is the fleshly birth and the spiritual birth.
    - 2) The Bible says except a man be born again (vv. 3,5).
    - 3) If water has reference to fleshly birth, then everyone would be half born again.
    - 4) The word "water" is consistent with Mark 16:16; Acts 2:38.
  - b. Matthew 28:18-20 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. <sup>19</sup>Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: <sup>20</sup>Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, *even* unto the end of the world. Amen.
    - 1) We preach under the great commission, therefore we must go into all the world and make disciples and baptize those who believe and repent in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit.
    - 2) Why would Jesus tell us to do these things if they were not essential?
  - c. Mark 16:16 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.

- 1) Some say this verse is not in the Bible. Even if it was not, what about: Acts 2:38; Acts 22:16; Gal. 3:27-29, etc.?
  - 2) Some say this is Holy Spirit baptism. (This verse is parallel to Matt. 28:18-20.)
  - 3) Does not say; "And is not baptized shall be damned."
- d. Acts 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.
- 1) For Jews only. Cf. Galatians 1:23 But they had heard only, That he which persecuted us in times past now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed.
  - 2) For "eis" means: "because of." Cf. Matthew 26:28 For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.
  - 3) What ever baptism is for repentance is for, because of the conjunction "and."
- e. Acts 22:16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.
- 1) Some claim Saul was saved on the road to Damascus.
  - 2) If so, Christ did not know it.
  - 3) If so, Saul did not know it.
  - 4) If so, God did not know it.
  - 5) If so, Ananias did not know it.
- f. Romans 6:1-6 What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? <sup>2</sup>God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? <sup>3</sup>Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were bap-

tized into his death? <sup>4</sup>Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. <sup>5</sup>For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also *in the likeness* of *his* resurrection: <sup>6</sup>Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with *him*, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

- g. Galatians 3:27-29 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. <sup>28</sup>There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. <sup>29</sup>And if ye *be* Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.
- h. 1 Peter 3:21 The like figure whereunto *even* baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ.
  - 1) Baptism saves in some way.
  - 2) Baptism separates the godly from the ungodly.
- i. Acts 18:8 And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house; and many of the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized. 1 Corinthians 1:14 I thank God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius.
- j. 1 Corinthians 1:17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect.

6. Baptism is important if:

- a. The great commission is important.
  - 1) Matthew 28:18-20 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. <sup>19</sup>Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: <sup>20</sup>Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you:

and, lo, I am with you alway, *even* unto the end of the world. Amen.

2) Mark 16:16 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.

b. Salvation in the name of Jesus is important.

1) Luke 24:47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

2) Acts 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

c. Receiving the remission of sins is important.

1) See Acts 2:38 in previous verse.

2) Acts 22:16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

d. Walking in new life is important.

1) Romans 6:1-6 What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? <sup>2</sup>God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? <sup>3</sup>Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? <sup>4</sup>Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. <sup>5</sup>For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also *in the likeness* of *his* resurrection: <sup>6</sup>Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with *him*, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

2) Colossians 3:1 If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God.

- e. Calling upon the name of the Lord is important.
- 1) Acts 2:21 And it shall come to pass, *that* whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved.
  - 2) Romans 10:13 For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.
  - 3) Acts 22:16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.
- f. Being in Christ is important.
- 1) Ephesians 1:3 Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly *places* in Christ.
  - 2) Ephesians 1:7 In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace.
  - 3) 1 John 5:10,11 He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son. <sup>11</sup>And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son.
  - 4) 2 Timothy 2:10 Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory.
  - 5) 2 Timothy 2:1 Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.
  - 6) Romans 6:3,4 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? <sup>4</sup>Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

- 7) Galatians 3:27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.
- g. Being connected with Abraham's promise is important.
- 1) Genesis 12:1-3 Now the LORD had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: <sup>2</sup> And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: <sup>3</sup>And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.
- 2) Galatians 3:27-29 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. <sup>28</sup>There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. <sup>29</sup>And if ye *be* Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.
- h. The new birth is important.
- 1) John 3:3-5 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. <sup>4</sup>Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? <sup>5</sup>Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
- 2) Acts 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.
- i. Obeying God's commandments is important.
- 1) Hebrews 5:8,9 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup>And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him.

2) Luke 6:46 And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

3) Acts 10:48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

j. Being saved is important.

1) Luke 19:10 For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

2) Mark 16:16 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.

k. Having a good conscience is important.

1) 1 Peter 3:21 The like figure whereunto *even* baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

2) 1 John 3:20,21 For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things.  
<sup>21</sup>Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, *then* have we confidence toward God.

l. The operation of God is important.

1) Colossians 2:11,12 In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: <sup>12</sup>Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

D. Sprinkling for baptism.

**Nazarene:** "Baptism may be administered by sprinkling, pouring or immersion, according to the choice of the applicant."<sup>39</sup>

1. Romans 6:3,4 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? <sup>4</sup>Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised

---

<sup>39</sup> Manual of the Church of the Nazarene, p. 31.

up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

2. Colossians 2:12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

3. See chart.

<b>Baptism</b>	<b>Immersion</b>	<b>Sprinkling</b>	<b>Pouring</b>
Water Acts 8:36	Yes	Yes	Yes
Much water Jn 3:23	Yes	No	No
A going unto the water Acts 8:36	Yes	No	No
A going down into the water Acts 8:38	Yes	No	No
That both the baptizer and the one to be baptized go down into the water Acts 8:38,39	Yes	No	No
A burial Rom 6:4	Yes	No	No
A resurrection Col 2:12	Yes	No	No
A birth Jn 3:5	Yes	No	No
Body washed Heb 10:22	Yes	No	No
A coming up out of the water Acts 8:39; Matt. 3:16	Yes	No	No <sup>40</sup>

E. Baptism saying, “in the name of Jesus.”

1. Some teach that the name of Jesus must be orally stated over the one being baptized or the baptism is not valid.
2. If this be true, then one’s salvation is dependent upon the administrator rather than the candidate of baptism.
3. Where in the Bible do scriptures teach the administrator what to say?

---

<sup>40</sup> Leroy Brownlow, Why I am a member of the Church of Christ (Brownlow Publishing Co., Inc. 1945) p. 135.

4. The Bible tells the administrator what to do, Matt. 28:18-20.

F. Infant baptism.

1. There is no Bible authority to baptize an infant.
2. The household argument.
3. The circumcision argument.
4. See chart.

<b>Facts</b>	<b>Adults</b>	<b>Infants</b>
Who was baptized?	Eunuch, etc. Acts 8	?
Who did the baptizing?	Paul, Acts 19:1-6	?
Where (what place)?	Desert place, Acts 8:26	?
For what reason?	To be saved, Mark 16:16	?
Where is it recorded?	Acts 2:38, etc.	No Bible authority
Do they have sins?	Yes!	No!
Able to believe?	Yes!	No!
Able to repent?	Yes!	No!
Able to confess Christ?	Yes!	No!
Needs to be baptized?	Yes!	No!

G. Thief on the cross.

1. Opening thoughts:
  - a. Many try to use the thief on the cross to:
    - 1) Promote the false doctrine of “faith only.”
    - 2) Promote death bed salvation.
    - 3) Promote salvation without water baptism.
    - 4) Promote a “rocking-chair” religion.
  - b. The thief on the cross is not an example of salvation for this age as we will see.

- c. Luke 23:39-43 And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. <sup>40</sup>But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? <sup>41</sup>And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. <sup>42</sup>And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. <sup>43</sup>And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

2. Was the thief baptized?

- a. What did he steal? Was he married? Did he have any children?
- b. People will say they do not know answers to the aforementioned questions.
- c. Why do they not know? The Bible does not say! So it is with water baptism.
- d. Was any one of the three who were on the crosses that day ever baptized? Matthew 3:13-17 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. <sup>14</sup>But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? <sup>15</sup>And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer *it to be* so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him. <sup>16</sup>And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: <sup>17</sup>And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.
- e. Luke 7:29,30 And all the people that heard *him*, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John. <sup>30</sup>But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.
- f. Why not use the rich young ruler as an example of salvation? Luke 18:22 Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me.

3. Why did the thief on the cross not obey Mark 16:16?
  - a. Mark 16:16 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.
  - b. The thief and Jesus died the same day. Jesus arose three days later. He stayed on earth another forty days. Acts 1:1-3 The former treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do and teach, <sup>2</sup>Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the Holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen: <sup>3</sup>To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God.
  - c. So about forty-three days after the thief was dead Jesus uttered the words of Mark 16:16. Therefore, the thief never heard these words.
  
4. Must we believe more than what the thief had to believe in order to be saved?
  - a. The answer is yes.
  - b. Romans 10:9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.
  - c. We must believe that God raised Jesus from the dead in order to be saved. The thief did not have to believe this.
  
5. When did salvation in the name of Jesus start?
  - a. Luke 24:47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.
  - b. Salvation in the name of Jesus was to start in Jerusalem - not with the thief on the cross.
  - c. Did salvation in the name of Jesus really start in Jerusalem? Acts 2:5 And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. Acts 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you

in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

6. Under which law did the thief live?
  - a. He lived under the Old Testament law.
  - b. Colossians 2:14-16 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; <sup>15</sup>And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it. <sup>16</sup>Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath *days*.
  - c. Matthew 26:28 For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.
  - d. Hebrews 9:16,17 For where a testament *is*, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator. <sup>17</sup>For a testament *is* of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator liveth.
  - e. Hebrews 7:12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.
7. Did the Lord have the right while on earth to dispense His blessings as He saw fit?
  - a. Yes!
  - b. The palsied man. Mark 2:3-5 And they come unto him, bringing one sick of the palsy, which was borne of four. <sup>4</sup>And when they could not come nigh unto him for the press, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken *it* up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsy lay. <sup>5</sup>When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee.
  - c. Zacchaeus. Luke 19:9,10 And Jesus said unto him, This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is a son of Abraham. <sup>10</sup>For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.
  - d. The thief on the cross.

- e. Today the Lord dispenses His blessings through His Last Will and Testament. John 8:32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. Matthew 7:21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.
8. Are we under a different commission than what the thief was?
- a. Matthew 10:5,6 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritans enter ye not: <sup>6</sup>But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.
  - b. Mark 16:15,16 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. <sup>16</sup>He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.
9. What are some great truths that we can learn from the thief on the cross?
- a. While it is true that the thief is not an example for salvation for this age, there are some lessons we can learn from him.
  - b. He did not want to die without hope.
  - c. He realized that even though he was dying because of a sin that he had committed, that no sin was too big for Jesus to handle.
  - d. He also realized that he did not want to die the way he lived.
  - e. He came to realize that when everyone seemed to be against him he still had a friend in Jesus.
  - f. He came to realize that the Biblical facts that he had learned in days gone by could help him greatly in time of trials and troubles.
  - g. He came to realize that it was time to consider the evidence and believe it.

- h. He had the courage to believe in Jesus when it was not popular to believe in Him.
  - i. He believed in life beyond the cross.
  - j. He did not turn against God because something bad had happen in his life.
  - k. He did not judge Jesus by the life of the disciples.
  - l. He did not accept the decision of the majority.
  - m. He was not concerned with whether or not his mother and father were going to approve of his newly found religion.
- H. Romans 10:9,10 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. <sup>10</sup>For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.
1. To whom was Paul speaking?
  2. Where is repentance in these verses?
  3. Do not forget that Paul also wrote Romans 6. Romans 6:3-6 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? <sup>4</sup>Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. <sup>5</sup>For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also *in the likeness* of *his* resurrection: <sup>6</sup>Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with *him*, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.
  4. Compare Romans 10:13 with Acts 2:21.
  5. Compare Romans 10:13 with Acts 22:16.
  6. Compare Romans 10:9,10 to the great commission.
  7. Compare Romans 10:9,10 with the thief on the cross.
  8. Compare Romans 10 with the conversion of Paul.
- I. Mourners' bench salvation.

1. God will not hear the prayer of the alien sinner who is praying for salvation. John 9:31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshiper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.
2. How can one pray to his spiritual Father in heaven when God is not his spiritual Father, because he has not been born into the family of God?
3. All spiritual blessings are in Christ. Ephesians 1:3 Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly *places* in Christ.
4. One might say, "Well, if one cannot pray to be saved, then how can one be saved?"
5. For what would the alien sinner pray?
  - a. Not for God to love him. John 3:16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.
  - b. Not for light. Psalm 119:130 The entrance of thy words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple.
  - c. Not for Christ to save him. Matthew 11:28 Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Acts 11:14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved. James 1:21 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.
  - d. Not for grace. Titus 2:11 For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men.
  - e. Not for faith. Romans 10:17 So then faith *cometh* by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.
  - f. Not for God to send the saving power. Romans 1:16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

- g. Not for God to purify soul. 1 Peter 1:22 Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, *see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.*
- h. Not for religion. James 1:27 Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, *and to keep himself unspotted from the world.*
- i. Not for God to accept him. Acts 10:34,35 Then Peter opened *his* mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: <sup>35</sup>But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.
- j. Not for the remission of sins. Acts 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.
- k. Not for God to be willing to save him. 2 Peter 3:9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to usward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.
- l. Not for sanctification. John 17:17 Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

6. Prayer did not save:

- a. Paul. Acts 9:11 And the Lord *said* unto him, Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas for one called Saul, of Tarsus: for, behold, he prayeth. Cf. Acts 9:6 And he trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord *said* unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do. Acts 22:16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.
- b. Cornelius. Acts 10:1,2 There was a certain man in Caesarea called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian *band*, 2 A devout *man*, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed

to God alway. Cf. Acts 11:14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.

7. What about the publican and the Pharisee? Luke 18:9-14 And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others: <sup>10</sup>Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. <sup>11</sup>The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. <sup>12</sup>I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. <sup>13</sup>And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. <sup>14</sup>I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.
8. What about calling upon the name of the Lord?
  - a. They were told to do this on the day of Pentecost. However, They did not understand and cried out men and brethren what must we do? Peter gave them more detail on calling upon the name of the Lord. Acts 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.
  - b. We must do all that is involved in calling on the name of the Lord. Acts 22:16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

J. Cornelius.

1. Morality by itself will not save
  - a. Acts 10:2 A devout *man*, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God alway.
  - b. Acts 10:22 And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by an holy angel to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee.

- c. Acts 11:14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.
- 2. Being religious will not save.
  - a. Acts 10:1-3 There was a certain man in Caesarea called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian *band*, <sup>2</sup>A devout *man*, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God alway. <sup>3</sup>He saw in a vision evidently about the ninth hour of the day an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius.
  - b. Matthew 7:21-23 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.
  - c. The Jews who crucified Jesus were religious.
- 3. Seeing visions will not save.
  - a. Acts 10:3 He saw in a vision evidently about the ninth hour of the day an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius.
  - b. Acts 11:14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.
  - c. Oral Roberts saw a ninety-foot tall Jesus. All Jesus knew to tell him was to tell the people to send money.
  - d. Some people believe if they have seen an angel that proves that they are saved.
- 4. Prayer will not save the alien sinner.
  - a. Acts 10:2 A devout *man*, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God alway.

- b. Acts 10:4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God.
  - c. Genesis 12:3 And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.
  - d. God showed the Gentiles and the world that His word was good.
  - e. John 9:31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshiper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.
  - f. If God does not hear the alien sinners prayer, then how can he be saved? The same way Cornelius was saved.
5. The gospel will save.
- a. Acts 10:6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.
  - b. Acts 11:14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.
  - c. Romans 1:16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.
  - d. James 1:21 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.
  - e. 1 Peter 1:23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.
6. There is one way for all men.
- a. Acts 10:34,35 Then Peter opened *his* mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: 35 But

in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.

b. Examples:

- 1) Ethiopian Eunuch..... Acts 8
- 2) Roman Citizen ..... Acts 9
- 3) Roman Soldier ..... Acts 10
- 4) Philippian Jailer..... Acts 16

c. There are not different plans of salvation for men today.

7. Was not Cornelius saved by Holy Spirit baptism?

a. Holy Spirit baptism not essential to salvation.

b. Holy Spirit baptism was not a command but a promise to the apostles.

c. The coming of the Holy Spirit was often a sign:

- 1) John 1:32,33 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. <sup>33</sup>And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost.
- 2) Mark 9:1 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power. Acts 1:8 But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth. Acts 2:4 And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

- 3) The giving of the Holy Spirit to Cornelius was a sign to the Jews that God had accepted the Gentiles. Acts 10:47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we?
8. What did Cornelius and his household do to be saved?
- a. Acts 15:7-9 And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up, and said unto them, Men *and* brethren, ye know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel, and believe. <sup>8</sup>And God, which knoweth the hearts, bare them witness, giving them the Holy Ghost, even as *he did* unto us; <sup>9</sup>And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.
  - b. Acts 11:18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.
  - c. Acts 10:48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.
9. Cornelius wanted to do all that God commanded.
- a. Acts 10:33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee; and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.
  - b. Acts 10:48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.
  - c. Hebrews 5:8,9 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup>And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him.
  - d. Cornelius got his household gathered together and wanted to hear all things that were commanded of God.

- e. He did not complain because he did not like some of the commandments.
10. Cornelius was added to the Lord's church.
- a. Acts 2:47 Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.
  - b. Cornelius was not added to some denominational church because they did not exist.
  - c. Cornelius was not added to one church and the rest of his household added to another.
  - d. Cornelius and his household were members of the same church that Peter was.
  - e. All people today must be a member of the same church in order to be saved, and that is the Lord's church.
11. Some say that Cornelius' receiving the Holy Spirit proves that he was saved and could not lose it.
- a. What about Judas Iscariot? He had the Holy Spirit: Matthew 10:4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him. Matthew 10:8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give. Matthew 10:20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. John 17:12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.

K. John 3:16.

- 1. We are told that water is not mentioned. Cf. John 3:3-5 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. <sup>4</sup>Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? <sup>5</sup>Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. Did Jesus forget what he taught in Mark 16:16? He that be-

lieveth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.

2. What about repentance? Luke 13:3 I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.
  3. What about confession? Matthew 10:32,33 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. <sup>33</sup>But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven. Cf. John 12:42, 43. Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: <sup>43</sup>For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.
  4. Compare: Acts 2:44 And all that believed were together, and had all things common.
- L. Acts 16:30,31 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved? <sup>31</sup>And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.
1. If saved at this point, they were saved without faith. Cf. Acts 16:32 And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.
  2. What about repentance?
  3. Notice when the Bible calls him a believer. Cf. Acts 16:34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God with all his house.
  4. Why go the same hour of the night if baptism is not necessary to salvation? Cf. Acts 16:33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed *their* stripes; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.
  5. Compare: Acts 2:44 And all that believed were together, and had all things common (Who is a believer?).
- M. Ephesians 2:8,9 What did they do to be saved by grace through faith?
1. They believed: Acts 19:17,18 And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and

the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified. <sup>18</sup>And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.

2. They repented: Acts 20:17 And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the church. Acts 20:21 Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.
3. They confessed: Acts 19:17,18 And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified. <sup>18</sup>And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.
4. They were baptized: Acts 19:1-6 And it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus: and finding certain disciples, <sup>2</sup>He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost. <sup>3</sup>And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism. <sup>4</sup>Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. <sup>5</sup>When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. <sup>6</sup>And when Paul had laid *his* hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

N. Acts 10:43 To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.

1. The prophet Joel was one who was a witness.
2. He was appealed to on the day of Pentecost.
3. An inspired man, Peter, appealed to Joel on the day of Pentecost to show that we must call upon the name of the Lord to be saved. Peter, in doing this, showed that certain things were a must to be born again: Acts 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

O. 1 Corinthians 1:17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect.

1. This is an elliptical sentence: John 6:27 Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. John 12:44 Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. 1 Timothy 5:23 Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities.
2. Compare the life of Christ and baptism: John 4:1,2 When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, <sup>2</sup>(Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,). Luke 7:29,30 And all the people that heard *him*, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John. <sup>30</sup>But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.
3. Paul preached under the great commission. Therefore, he was sent to baptize: Matthew 28:19,20 Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: <sup>20</sup>Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, *even* unto the end of the world. Amen.
4. If Paul was not sent to baptize, then he was not sent to preach anything about denominational churches because one cannot become a member of a denomination without being baptized. (This is their dilemma.)
5. If Christ sent him not to baptize, then by what authority did he baptize those mentioned?
6. Why did Paul make these comments? See context.

## **XV. FALSE DOCTRINES IN WORSHIP.**

- A. Instrumental music.
  1. Aid argument.

<b>Commands</b>	<b>Aids</b>	<b>Additions</b>
Genesis 6:14 Make thee an ark of gopher wood; rooms shalt thou make in the ark, and shalt pitch it within and without with pitch.	Hammer, saw, size of the trees.	Oak, pine, maple, cedar, etc.
2 Kings 5:10 And Elisha sent a messenger unto him, saying, Go and wash in Jordan seven times, and thy flesh shall come again to thee, and thou shalt be clean.	Clothing, transportation, others who might watch.	Abanna, Pharpar rivers of Damascus.
Lord's Supper Bread and fruit of the vine: Matthew 26:26, 27 And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed <i>it</i> , and brake <i>it</i> , and gave <i>it</i> to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. 27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave <i>it</i> to them, saying, Drink ye all of it.	Plate and cup.	Hamburgers, Pepsi.
Prayer: John 16:23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give <i>it</i> you.	Posture, time and place.	Count beads, pray to Mary, pray to saints.
Sing: Ephesians 5:19 Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord.	Song book, lights, notes, pews, etc.	Mechanical instrumental music.

2. Old Testament argument.

- a. Notice, this is a great admission. Why not say it is in the New Testament?
- b. Colossians 2:14,16 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; 15 *And* having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it. 16 Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath *days*.

- c. Galatians 5:4 Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.
- d. God knows how to ask for instrumental music if He wants it: Psalm 150:3-5 Praise him with the sound of the trumpet: praise him with the psaltery and harp. <sup>4</sup>Praise him with the timbrel and dance: praise him with stringed instruments and organs. <sup>5</sup>Praise him upon the loud cymbals: praise him upon the high sounding cymbals.
- e. Why not take all that is in the Old Testament? Galatians 5:3 For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law.

3. Psallo argument.

- a. **Thayer:** “...in the N.T. to sing a hymn, to celebrate the praises of God in song...”
- b. **Vine:** “...in the N.T., to sing a hymn, sing praise...”
- c. **Green:** “...in N.T. to sing praises...”
- e. **Abbott, Smith:** “...in the N.T. to sing a hymn, sing praise...”
- f. **Analytical Greek Lexicon:** “...in the N.T. to sing praises...”
- g. **Moulton & Milligan:** “.. in the N.T., as in James 5:13 sing a hymn...”
- h. The word psallo is found five times in the N.T. It is translated “sing” three times, “sing psalms” once, and “make melody” once.
- i. If psallo means to sing and play, then every Christian is commanded to sing and play, because every Christian is commanded to psallo.
- j. If psallo includes the mechanical instrument of music, the 47 Greek and Hebrew scholars who produced the King James Version were wrong! So were the 101 scholars who produced the American Standard Version!

4. The temple argument.
  - a. Will they accept everything that was done at the temple?
  - b. Instrumental music was authorized in the Old Testament: 2 Chron. 29:25 And he set the Levites in the house of the LORD with cymbals, with psalteries, and with harps, according to the commandment of David, and of Gad the king's seer, and Nathan the prophet: for so was the commandment of the LORD by his prophets.
  - c. The Christians going to the temple does not prove that they endorsed all that went on in the temple.
  - d. The Old Testament has been nailed to the cross.
5. The "I like it" argument.
  - a. Notice, they did not say because it pleases God!
  - b. Romans 15:3 For even Christ pleased not himself; but, as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me.
  - c. John 5:30 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.
6. Verses on the kind of music God wants today.
  - a. Matthew 26:30 And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.
  - b. Mark 14:26 And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.
  - c. Acts 16:25 And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them.
  - d. Romans 15:9 And that the Gentiles might glorify God for *his* mercy; as it is written, For this cause I will confess to thee among the Gentiles, an sing unto thy name.

- e. 1 Corinthians 14:15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.
- f. Ephesians 5:19 Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord.
- g. Colossians 3:16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.
- h. Hebrews 2:12 Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee.
- i. James 5:13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing psalms.

6. Instrumental music in heaven.

- a. Notice again, they did not say in the worship service of the church.
- b. Revelation 14:2 And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps.
- c. The passage proves too much.
  - 1) Infants in heaven. Can we have infant membership and baptism?
  - 2) No marriages in heaven. Can we do away with marriages here on earth? Matthew 22:30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.
  - 3) Old Testament                      Worship in NT church  
     Psa 150                                  ?????????  
  
     Heaven  
     Rev 14:2

7. It does not say not to use it.
- a. Ephesians 5:19 Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord.
  - b. Revelation 22:18,19 For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: <sup>19</sup>And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and *from* the things which are written in this book.
  - c. It does not say not to baptize infants.
  - d. It does not say not to shoot pool in worship.
  - e. It does not say not to tumble in worship.
  - f. Mailman and letter. Letter addressed to Wesley Simons.
  - g. Mother sends son to store for milk and bread.
  - h. It does say not to use hamburgers and Pepsi on the Lord's Table.
  - i. Hebrews 7:14 For *it is* evident that our Lord sprang out of Judah; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.

8. Specific and Generic Commandments.

	Specific	Generic	Scripture
a.	Noah/gopher wood	wood	Gen. 6:14
b.	Naaman/7 times in Jordan	dip in water	2 Kgs 5
c.	Lord's supper/fruit of vine; unleaven bread	eat, drink	Mt. 26:26,29
d.	Kind of music/sing	make music	Eph. 5:19

e. Blind man/wash in Siloam                      wash in water                      John 9:7

9. The kind of worship instrumental music constitutes.

- a. It is an addition: Deut 4:2; Num. 22:18; 2 John 9; Rev 22:18, 19.
- b. It is the wrong kind of praise: Heb. 13:15,16; Eph. 5:19; Col. 3:16.
- c. It is will worship: Col. 2:23.
- d. It is vain worship: Mark 7:7,9.
- e. It is not an act of faith: Heb 11:6; Rom 10:17; Jude 3.
- f. It is a rejection of plain teaching to sing: Eph 5:19; Mark 7:13.
- g. It is offensive to others: Rom 14:21; 2 Cor 11:29.
- h. It interferes with the worship of others.
- i. It is pleasing man, not God.

10. What others have said:

- a. Martin Luther (Lutheran), "The organ in the worship is an ensign of Baal."
- b. John Calvin (Presbyterian), "Musical instruments in celebrating the praise of God would be no more suitable than the burning of incense, the lighting of lamps, and the restoration of the other shadows of the Law. The Catholics borrowed it from the Jews."
- c. John Wesley (Methodist), "I have no opposition to the organ in our chapel provided it is neither seen or heard."
- d. C. H. Spurgeon (Baptist), his comments on 1 Cor 14:15, "I would as soon pray to God with machinery as sing to God with machinery."

- e. Adam Clarke, The greatest commentator of all time among the Methodists, “Music as a science, I esteem and admire: but instruments of music in the House of God I abominate and abhor. This is the abuse of music; and here I register my protest against all such corruption’s in the worship of the author of Christianity.” Clarke’s Commentary, Vol. IV., p 686.
- f. John Knox, Scottish reformer, “called the organ a ‘Kist’ (Chest of whistles.” McClintock & Strong’s Encyclopedia, Music, Vol. VI p. 762.
- g. Conybeare and Howson, famous scholars of the Church of England, in commentary on Eph 5:19, say, “Make melody with the music of your hearts, to the Lord ..... Let your songs be, not the drinking songs of heathen feasts, but Psalms and hymns; and their accompaniment, not the music of the lyre, but the melody of the heart.” Life and Epistles of St. Paul, Vol. II, p. 408.

11. Instrumental music in worship.

- a. Jesus Christ never authorized it.
- b. The Holy Spirit has not revealed it.
- c. The apostles never commanded it.
- e. No inspired man ever taught it.
- d. The Christians of the first century never used it.
- f. Therefore, it is wrong.

12. Questions:

- a. Give one New Testament verse which says that we can use instrumental music in worship to God.

- b. Instrumental music in worship to God is (check all of the correct boxes):
- Commandment.
  - An aid.
  - Matter of opinion.
  - Sin.
  - None of the above.
- c. All who sing songs of worship without the use of instrumental music (check all of the correct boxes):
- Obey God.
  - Sin.
  - Involve themselves in a matter of opinion.
- d. Ephesians 5:19 teaches (check all of the correct boxes):
- We are to sing and make melody in the heart.
  - We are to sing and play mechanical instruments of music.
  - We are to play only a mechanical instrument of music.
  - None of the above.
- e. We must do all we do in the name of Jesus. True or False?
- f. One person (Christian) can do the following for the entire congregation (check all of the correct boxes):
- Pray.
  - Live a godly life.
  - Partake of the Lord's Supper.
  - Play a piano.
  - Give.
  - None of the above.
- g. Do the KJV and the ASV translate Eph. 5:19 and Col. 3:16 correctly?

h. Which of the following is sinful and why?

- Sprinkling for baptism.
- Baptizing infants.
- Roast meat on the Lord's table. (Lord's supper).
- Playing mechanical instruments of music in worship to God today.
- None of the above.

i. Can Eph. 5:19; 1 Cor. 14:15; Rom. 15:9 and Jam. 5:13 be obeyed and complied with without the use of mechanical instrumental music?

- Yes.                       No.

B. The role of the woman in worship.

1. 1 Timothy 2:11-15 Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. <sup>12</sup>But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence. <sup>13</sup>For Adam was first formed, then Eve. <sup>14</sup>And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression. <sup>15</sup>Notwithstanding she shall be saved in child-bearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety.
2. Galatians 3:28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.
3. Is it custom or not?
4. Why did not the Lord choose a woman preacher or apostle?

C. The Lord's Supper.

1. Transubstantiation.

**Catholic:** "The doctrine says in brief that when the words of consecration, 'This is my body. This is my blood,' are pronounced, the bread and the wine are changed into the body and blood, soul and divinity of our Saviour, Jesus Christ. This is effected by the power of God, exercised through the agency of his ambassador, a

duly ordained priest. How this is done, we do not know. That it is done, we believe on the authority of Christ himself.”<sup>41</sup>

2. Time of observance.

**Presbyterians:** “The Lord’s Supper, or the Communion, is to be celebrated as often as the minister and session think wise, so as not to have it so frequently that it loses its significance through familiarity, and yet often enough to provide the inspiration and spiritual growth which Christians need.”<sup>42</sup>

**Adventists:** “In adopting the quarterly plan, the early advent believers felt that in holding the service more frequently there would be the danger of formality and failure to realize the solemnity of the service.”<sup>43</sup>

**Jehovah’s Witnesses:** “However, each year, on the anniversary of Christ’s death, the few remaining members of the ‘little flock’ yet on earth keep the Memorial of Christ’s death. As Jesus directed, they partake of unleavened bread and red wine, which are symbols representing the flesh and blood that Jesus gave for mankind.”<sup>44</sup>

- a. Acts 20:7 And upon the first *day* of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow; and continued his speech until midnight.
- b. Why does not giving become common place: 1 Corinthians 16:1,2 Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye. <sup>2</sup>Upon the first *day* of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as *God* hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.
- c. Why does not attending services become common place: Hebrews 10:25 Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some *is*; but exhorting *one another*: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

3. One cup.

---

<sup>41</sup> John A. O’Brien, The faith of millions. (Huntington, Ind.: Our Sunday Visitor, 1938) p. 230.

<sup>42</sup> Park H. Miller, Why I am a Presbyterian. (Toronto: Thomas Nelson & Sons, 1956) p. 94.

<sup>43</sup> W.E. Read, Frequency of the Lord’s Supper, (Ministry, April 1955). p. 43.

<sup>44</sup> The Truth that leads to Eternal Life, p. 80.

4. Closed communion.

**Baptist:** “Baptist do not accept anything as baptism except that administered by the Baptist church, therefore cannot invite others to partake of the supper.”<sup>45</sup>

5. Is it the most important item of worship?
6. Changing of elements.

**Mormons:** “For, behold, I say unto you, that it mattereth not what ye shall eat or what ye shall drink when ye partake of the sacrament, if it be that ye do it with an eye single to my glory, remembering unto the Father my body which was laid down for you, and my blood which was shed for the remission of your sins.”<sup>46</sup>

- D. Giving: Some claim that one can take up a contribution anytime. Some claim that they can have car washes, bake sales, etc. to support the work of the church.

1. When is one to give?
2. 1 Corinthians 16:1,2 Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.  
<sup>2</sup>Upon the first *day* of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

- E. The day of worship: The Lord’s day or the sabbath.

**Adventist:** “What is the change of the Sabbath, but the sign, or mark of the authority of the Roman church – the mark of the beast?”<sup>47</sup>

1. The command to keep the sabbath:
  - a. The origin of this command:
    - 1) Why it was given. Genesis 2:1,3 Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them.  
<sup>2</sup>And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from

---

<sup>45</sup> Joe T. Odle, Church Members Handbook, (Broadman Press: Nashville, TN.) p. 19.

<sup>46</sup> Doctrine and Covenants 27:2.

<sup>47</sup> Ellen G White, The Great Controversy, p.448.

all his work which he had made. <sup>3</sup>And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.

- 2) Adventists claim this is the *beginning* of God's command for everyone to observe the sabbath, but this is not true. It was about 2,500 years before God gave specific commands concerning the "sabbath day."
- 3) Ex. 16:22,26. This is the first time the word "sabbath" occurs. It is the first time any detail is given about honoring the sabbath.
  - a) Ex. 20:8,11. The sabbath was part of the Ten Commandments given at Mt. Sinai.
  - b) Prophets said the sabbath command began at Mt. Sinai. Nehemiah 9:13,14 Thou camest down also upon mount Sinai, and spakest with them from heaven, and gavest them right judgments, and true laws, good statutes and commandments: <sup>14</sup>And madest known unto them thy holy sabbath, and commandedst them precepts, statutes, and laws, by the hand of Moses thy servant.
  - c) The sabbath was given solely to the Jews. Deut. 5:2,3 The LORD our God made a covenant with us in Horeb. <sup>3</sup>The LORD made not this covenant with our fathers, but with us, even us, who *are* all of us here alive this day.
  - d) Deut. 5:15. Would the sabbath be a reminder to the Gentiles that God led them out of Egyptian bondage?
  - e) Ex. 31:13-17 Speak thou also unto the children of Israel, saying, Verily my sabbaths ye shall keep: for it *is* a sign between me and you throughout your generations; that ye may know that I *am* the LORD that doth sanctify you. <sup>14</sup>Ye shall keep the sabbath therefore; for it *is* holy unto you: every one that defileth it

shall surely be put to death: for whosoever doeth any work therein, that soul shall be cut off from among his people. <sup>15</sup>Six days may work be done; but in the seventh *is* the sabbath of rest, holy to the LORD: whosoever doeth *any* work in the sabbath day, he shall surely be put to death. <sup>16</sup>Wherefore the children of Israel shall keep the sabbath, to observe the sabbath throughout their generations, *for* a perpetual covenant. <sup>17</sup>It *is* a sign between me and the children of Israel for ever: for in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day he rested, and was refreshed. (Sabbaths were a sign between God and Israel and none other.)

2. The Ten Commandments and the sabbath are no longer binding.
  - a. A New Covenant was promised.
    - 1) Jeremiah 31:31-34 Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: <sup>32</sup>Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day *that* I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: <sup>33</sup>But this *shall be* the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. <sup>34</sup>And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.
    - 2) Hebrews 8:8-12 For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah: <sup>9</sup>Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant,

and I regarded them not, saith the Lord. <sup>10</sup>For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people:

<sup>11</sup>And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. <sup>12</sup>For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

3) The old covenant was not adequate. Heb. 10:1-4 For the law having a shadow of good things to come, *and* not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. <sup>2</sup>For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshipers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins. <sup>3</sup>But in those *sacrifices there is a remembrance again made* of sins every year. <sup>4</sup>For *it is* not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins.

4) The law has been changed. Heb. 7:12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

b. Christ nailed the law to the cross.

1) Ephesians 2:12-16 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world: <sup>13</sup>But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. <sup>14</sup>For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition *between us*; <sup>15</sup>Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, *even* the law of commandments *contained* in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace; <sup>16</sup>And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby.

- 2) Colossians 2:14 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross.
- 3) Romans 7:1-3 Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? <sup>2</sup>For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to *her* husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of *her* husband. <sup>3</sup>So then if, while *her* husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.

3. Arguments used by the Sabbatarians.

a. Since Christ kept the sabbath, so should we.

- 1) Mark 6:1,2 And he went out from thence, and came into his own country; and his disciples follow him. <sup>2</sup>And when the sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing *him* were astonished, saying, From whence hath this *man* these things? and what wisdom *is* this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?
- 2) Galatians 4:4 But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law.
- 3) Jesus observed the law being circumcised, kept the Passover, etc.!

b. "There is a distinction to be made between 'the law of God' and 'the law of Moses.'"

- 1) The law of God is said to be Ten Commandments. The law of Moses contains the ceremonial parts of the law.
- 2) Nehemiah 8:1 And all the people gathered themselves together as one man into the street that was

before the water gate; and they spake unto Ezra the scribe to bring the book of the law of Moses, which the LORD had commanded to Israel. Nehemiah 10:29 They clave to their brethren, their nobles, and entered into a curse, and into an oath, to walk in God's law, which was given by Moses the servant of God, and to observe and do all the commandments of the LORD our Lord, and his judgments and his statutes. (The law of God and the law of Moses were the same!)

- 3) Luke 2:24 And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons. Compare to the law of Moses. Leviticus 12:8 And if she be not able to bring a lamb, then she shall bring two turtles, or two young pigeons; the one for the burnt offering, and the other for a sin offering: and the priest shall make an atonement for her, and she shall be clean.

c. The New Testament commands the sabbath to be observed.

- 1) Hebrews 4:8,9 For if Jesus (Joshua) had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day. <sup>9</sup>There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God.
- 2) The context reveals this was a "heavenly rest." Heaven!

d. Paul preached on the sabbath.

- 1) Acts 13:14 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and sat down. Acts 16:13, 14 And on the sabbath we went out of the city by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made; and we sat down, and spake unto the women which resorted *thither*. <sup>14</sup>And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshiped God, heard *us*: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul.

- e. If the sabbath command is no longer binding on men, then neither are the other commands, i.e. “Thou shalt not steal,” etc.
- 1) All the Old Testament has ended.
  - 2) All of the moral principles have been restated in the New Covenant with the exception of the fourth.
    - a) Thou shalt have no other gods before Me (Acts 14:15).
    - b) Thou shalt not make unto thee a graven image (1 John 5:21).
    - c) Thou shalt not take the name of God in vain (Jas. 5:12).
    - d) Remember the sabbath (???????).
    - e) Honor thy father and thy mother (Eph. 6:1).
    - f) Thou shalt not kill (1 Pet. 4:15).
    - g) Thou shalt not commit adultery (1 Cor. 6:9,10).
    - h) Thou shalt not steal (Eph. 4:28).
    - i) Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbor (Col. 3:9).
    - j) Thou shalt not covet (Eph. 5:3).
- f. Christians are taught to obey the Ten Commandments by James.
- 1) James 2:10 For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one *point*, he is guilty of all.
  - 2) James 1:25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth *therein*, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed. (We are under the “perfect law of liberty.”)

- 3) Please notice that all the commands listed by James are a part of the “perfect law of liberty.”
- g. “And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on a sabbath,” thus, proving that the Lord’s followers would keep the sabbath during the gospel age.
  - h. The sabbath was changed to Sunday by the fallible authority of man in an edict of Emperor Constantine in A.D. 321.
    - 1) The religious significance of the first day of the week was not created by Constantine, but had its origin from the beginning of the New Covenant.
    - 2) The edict gave imperial, legal sanction for the first day of the week, designated by its Roman name “Sunday” as a day of religious worship and cessation of secular work. (James Tolle)
  - i. The sabbath is an everlasting covenant!
    - 1) Exodus 31:13,17.
    - 2) Notice the words *‘throughout their generations....a sign between me and the children of Israel for ever..’* This was to last as long as the Mosaic system of things lasted.
    - 3) Note the inconsistency of those who say the sabbath must be observed now.
    - 4) Exodus 12:14 And this day shall be unto you for a memorial; and ye shall keep it a feast to the LORD throughout your generations; ye shall keep it a feast by an ordinance for ever. (The Passover feast was to be observed forever. Do Sabbatarians observe this today?)
    - 5) Exodus 30:8 And when Aaron lighteth the lamps at even, he shall burn incense upon it, a perpetual incense before the LORD throughout your generations. (The burning of incense was *“perpetual, ...throughout your generations.”*) The same type of language is used to describe the sabbath.

- 6) Exodus 29:42 *This shall be* a continual burnt offering throughout your generations *at* the door of the tabernacle of the congregation before the LORD: where I will meet you, to speak there unto thee. (Continual burnt offerings, throughout your generations!)
- 7) Leviticus 23:14 And ye shall eat neither bread, nor parched corn, nor green ears, until the selfsame day that ye have brought an offering unto your God: *it shall be* a statute for ever throughout your generations in all your dwellings.

4. The Lord's day.

- a. The resurrection of Christ came about on the first day of the week.
  - 1) Mark 16:9 Now when *Jesus* was risen early the first *day* of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils. (No greater event has ever occurred!)
  - 2) Surely no other day has been worthy of such distinction as being called the Lord's day!
- b. It was the day on which He appeared to His disciples by many infallible proofs.
  - 1) John 20:19,26.
- c. The church began on Pentecost (The first day of the week). Lev. 23:11-15. (Pentecost always came about on the first day of the week.)
  - 1) Acts 2.
- d. Holy Spirit was given (Acts 2:1,4).
- e. A day when forgiveness of sins was first given in the name of Jesus (Lk. 24:47,49).
- f. Church established (Acts 2:1,47).
- g. The Lord's day and the Lord's Supper.

- 1) Matt. 26:26,28.
  - 2) Acts 20:7 And upon the first *day* of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow; and continued his speech until midnight
- h. The day the contribution is to be given.
- 1) 1 Corinthians 16:1,2 Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye. <sup>2</sup>Upon the first *day* of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as *God* hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.
- i. John was in the Spirit on the “Lord’s day.”
- 1) Revelation 1:10 I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet.

## **XVI. FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE CHURCH.**

- A. One church is as good as another. (Compare Noah’s ark; the Jones and Smiths.)
1. This argument is made because they see one denomination as being just as good as another.
  2. We agree that one denomination is just as good as another. They are all equally wrong!
  3. They make the argument that we are all going to heaven, so it does not matter which route we take. They compare this to going to Nashville. They state that it does not matter which road we take.
- B. Jesus yes, church no.
1. The concept here is the man, yes , the plan, no.
  2. John 12:48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

3. One cannot have the man without the plan. Luke 6:46 And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?
4. Again, the church is looked at as being non-essential.
5. Consider Acts 20:28. Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. Ephesians 5:25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it.

C. All churches comprise the one true church.

1. They use the vine and the branches argument. John 15:1-7 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. <sup>2</sup>Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. <sup>3</sup>Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. <sup>4</sup>Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. <sup>5</sup>I am the vine, ye *are* the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. <sup>6</sup>If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they are burned. <sup>7</sup>If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.
2. They use the “hub, spokes and wheel argument.”
3. They say that they are a member of the Lord’s church, but that they are also Baptist, Methodist, etc.

D. The “Church of Christ” had its origin with Alexander Campbell.

1. Name one thing that I believe or practice that had its origin with Alexander Campbell and I will give it up.
2. If I am a member of a church established by Alexander Campbell, I certainly do not want to be. So, I ask them, what should I do?
3. Is the Lord’s church here on the face of the earth anywhere separate and apart from denominationalism? If so, where?
4. Since the denominational world does not like certain doctrines, then maybe Alexander Campbell originated them.

- a. One church; Eph. 4:5; Eph. 1:22,23.
  - b. Division is wrong; Jn. 17:20,21.
  - c. Baptism for the remission of sins; Acts 2:38.
  - d. Lord's Supper on the first day of the week; Acts 20:7.
  - e. Faith only will not save; Jas. 2:24,26.
  - f. Notice, Mr. Campbell did not originate the aforementioned commands, God did. We are under obligation to obey God.
5. Name anything that we believe or practice, as a matter of doctrine, that had its origin with man and we promise you that we will give it up.
6. Will you do the same? This is what separates the Lord's church from denominationalism. It is a matter of Bible authority.
- E. John the Baptist established the church.
- 1. If so, it had no law; Matt. 26:28; Heb. 9:16,17.
  - 2. If so, it was not paid for; Acts 20:28.
  - 3. If so, Jesus did not know it; Matt. 16:18.
  - 4. If so, John was not in it; Matt. 11:11.
  - 5. If so, it had no system of worship.
  - 6. If so, it had no organization.
- F. The church and the kingdom are not the same.
- 1. There are those who try to teach that the church and the kingdom are not the same.
  - 2. Matthew 16:18,19 And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. <sup>19</sup>And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall

be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

3. The church and the kingdom are the same. See chart:

<b>Church</b>	<b>Kingdom</b>
Christ is the head of the church. Eph. 1:22,23.	Christ is the King of the kingdom. Col. 1:13.
Baptized into the church, the body. 1 Cor. 12:13.	One is baptized into the kingdom. John 3:5.
Apostles are in the church. Eph. 2:20.	Apostles are in the kingdom. Matt. 19:28.
The church is identified with the washing of regeneration that is the new birth. Titus 3:5.	The kingdom is identified with the times of regeneration. Matt. 19:28.
The Lord's table is in the church. 1 Cor. 11:26.	The Lord's table is in the kingdom. Luke 22:29,30.
The parables of Matthew 13 have been understood for ages as applying to the church.	All seven are identified with the Kingdom of Heaven. Matt. 13:19,24,31,33,44,45,47.
The gospel of Christ and His church are the mystery kept in silence. Rom. 16:25.	The teaching of Christ is called the mysteries of the Kingdom of Heaven. Matt. 13:11.
The church is an everlasting institution. Eph. 3:21.	The Kingdom is everlasting. Dan. 2:44.
The church is called the Israel of God. Gal. 6:16.	The Kingdom is also identified as that same Israel of God. Matt. 19:28.
Peter told people how to enter the church. Acts 2:47.	But he had the keys to the kingdom. Matt. 16:13,19.

G. The church is the building.

1. Acts 5:11 And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things.
2. Acts 11:22 Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch.
3. Acts 20:28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

H. Church succession.

**Baptist:** “I have no question in my own mind that there has been a historical succession of the Baptists from the days of Christ to the present time.”<sup>48</sup>

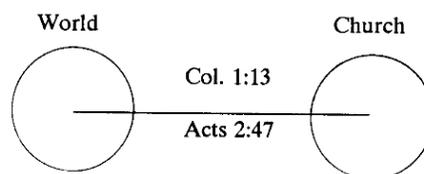
1. Some Baptists believe that we must trace the church back one church after another until we get back to the first church.
2. Luke 8:11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.
3. If church succession is a must, then no one could know for sure that he is saved. Because if the chain was broken at any point he would be wrong.
4. If I want Georgia rattlesnake watermelons, I do not have to grow a vine all the way from Georgia to Elizabethton, Tennessee. All I need to do is plant the right seed.
5. This is the beautiful thing about New Testament Christianity. If we do exactly what they did in the first century, then we can be exactly what they were , just Christians members of the Lord’s church.

I. That one can be saved outside the church.

**Baptist:** “Salvation therefore, does not include church membership or even baptism. But salvation will lead to both.”<sup>49</sup>

**Baptist:** “We do not join the church to be saved, but because we are saved.”<sup>50</sup>

1. There are only two places that responsible people can be. One is either in the world or in the church. See chart:



---

<sup>48</sup> John T. Christian, History of Baptists, p. 5.

<sup>49</sup> Nuggets of Baptist Belief, p. 10.

<sup>50</sup> Nuggets of Baptist Belief, p. 10.

2. Colossians 1:13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated *us* into the kingdom of his dear Son.
  3. Acts 2:47 Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.
- J. The truth about the church.
1. The pattern for the church is found in the Bible.
    - a. The true church is great and must have certain identifying characteristics.
    - b. It is great because it was planned. Ephesians 3:10,11 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly *places* might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, <sup>11</sup>According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord.
    - c. It is great because it existed in prophecy. Dan. 2; Isa 2; 1 Chronicles 17:11-15 And it shall come to pass, when thy days be expired that thou must go *to be* with thy fathers, that I will raise up thy seed after thee, which shall be of thy sons; and I will establish his kingdom. <sup>12</sup>He shall build me an house, and I will stablish his throne for ever. <sup>13</sup>I will be his father, and he shall be my son: and I will not take my mercy away from him, as I took *it* from *him* that was before thee: <sup>14</sup>But I will settle him in mine house and in my kingdom for ever: and his throne shall be established for evermore. <sup>15</sup>According to all these words, and according to all this vision, so did Nathan speak unto David. Acts 2:29-31 Men *and* brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. <sup>30</sup>Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne; <sup>31</sup>He seeing this before spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.
    - d. It is great because of its Divine origin. Hebrews 3:4 For every house is builded by some *man*; but he that built all things *is* God. Psalm 127:1 Except the LORD build the house, they labour in vain that build it: except the LORD keep the city, the watchman waketh *but* in vain.

- e. It is great because of the price that was paid for it. Acts 20:28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. Ephesians 5:25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it.
- f. It is great because of its Head. Ephesians 1:22,23 And hath put all *things* under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the church, <sup>23</sup>Which is his body, the fullness of him that filleth all in all.
- g. It is great because it is governed by Divine law. Hebrews 7:12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law. Hebrews 1:1,2 God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, <sup>2</sup>Hath in these last days spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds. Matthew 17:5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.
- h. It is great because of its mission.
  - 1) Teach the lost. Matthew 28:19,20 Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: <sup>20</sup>Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, *even* unto the end of the world. Amen. Mark 16:15, 16 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. <sup>16</sup>He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.
  - 2) Teach the saved. Acts 20:28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

- 3) Benevolence. James 1:27 Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, *and* to keep himself unspotted from the world.
  - i. It is great because of its destiny. John 14:1-3 Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. <sup>2</sup>In my Father's house are many mansions: if *it were* not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. <sup>3</sup>And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, *there* ye may be also. Ephesians 5:23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body. 1 Corinthians 15:24 Then *cometh* the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.
  - j. The true church will be right in: origin, organization, head and headquarters, plan of salvation, worship, work, moral code, discipline, standard by which it is guided, devotion and love.
  - k. The illustration of the car in the parking lot and keys given to another.
2. Non-denominational. See chart:

Denominationalism	VS	Christianity
1. Many bodies or churches.		1. One body or church. Matt. 16:18; 1 Cor. 12:20.
2. Founded by men.		2. Founded by Christ. Matt. 16:18.
3. Human heads.		3. Christ the head. Eph. 1:22,23.
4. Human creeds.		4. Bible as the only creed. 2 Tim. 3:16,17.
5. Wear human names.		5. Glorify God in the name Christian. 1 Pet. 4:16.
6. Follow men.		6. Following men is condemned. 1 Cor. 1:10-13.
7. Churches unknown to the Bible.		7. Church mentioned in the Bible. Rom. 16:16.
8. Membership in denominations not essential to salvation.		8. Membership in Christ's church is essential to salvation. Eph. 5:23.
9. Preach many gospels.		9. If a man preach any other gospel he is condemned. Gal. 1:6-9.
10. Rewrite creeds every few years.		10. Bible remains the same. Matt. 24:35.
11. Many faiths.		11. One faith. Eph. 4:5.
12. Many baptisms.		12. One baptism. Eph. 4:5.
13. Joins churches.		13. God adds to the church. Acts 2:47.
14. Claim to be abiding in branches of the church.		14. Jesus said, "abide in me the true vine." John 15:1-6.
15. Walk by different rules.		15. Walk by the same rule. Phil. 3:16.
16. Thank God in their prayers for so many churches.		16. Jesus prayed for oneness. John 17:20,21.
17. Say doctrine is not important.		17. Take heed unto doctrine. 1 Tim 4:16. <sup>51</sup>

J. Name of churches.

1. Where is Bible authority for all these different religious groups and the names by which they go?

---

Error! Main Document Only.<sup>51</sup> Leroy Brownlow, Why I am a member of the Church of Christ (Brownlow Publishing Co., Inc., 1945) p. 70,71.

2. We are to wear Bible names:

a. God's people—collectively.

- |     |                          |                     |
|-----|--------------------------|---------------------|
| 1)  | The church               | Acts 2:47;8:1;12:1. |
| 2)  | The body                 | Col. 1:18.          |
| 3)  | The body of Christ       | 1 Cor. 12:27.       |
| 4)  | Body of Christ           | Eph. 1:22,23.       |
| 5)  | Churches of Christ       | Rom. 16:16.         |
| 6)  | My church (Christ)       | Matt. 16:18.        |
| 7)  | Church of the Lord       | Acts 20:28.         |
| 8)  | Kingdom                  | Heb. 12:28.         |
| 9)  | His body                 | Eph. 1:23; 5:30.    |
| 10) | Church of the living God | 1 Tim. 3:15.        |
| 11) | Kingdom of His dear Son  | Col. 1:13.          |
| 12) | Flock of God             | 1 Pet. 5:3.         |
| 13) | The whole family         | Eph. 3:15.          |

b. God's people—individually.

- |    |                 |   |
|----|-----------------|---|
| 1) | Christian       | 1 Pet. 4:16; Acts 11:26;<br>Acts 22:26. |
| 2) | Disciple        | Acts 11:26; 16:1.                       |
| 3) | Saint           | 1 Cor. 1:2; 6:2.                        |
| 4) | Saints          | Phil. 4:21,22.                          |
| 5) | Brethren        | Acts 9:30.                              |
| 6) | Believers       | Acts 5:14.                              |
| 7) | Members         | 1 Cor. 6:15.                            |
| 8) | Children of God | Gal. 3:26.                              |

## XVII. FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING FINAL THINGS.

A. The kingdom has not been established. (Reasons why we know the kingdom has been established.)

1. It was to come within the time frame of the four world empires of Daniel chapter two. Those empires have come and gone. Daniel 2:44 And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, *but* it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.
2. Christ is the High Priest now and He is to be priest and king at the same time. Zechariah 6:12,13 And speak unto him, saying, Thus

speaketh the LORD of hosts, saying, Behold the man whose name *is* The BRANCH; and he shall grow up out of his place, and he shall build the temple of the LORD: <sup>13</sup>Even he shall build the temple of the LORD; and he shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon his throne; and he shall be a priest upon his throne: and the counsel of peace shall be between them both.

3. Many who lived in the time of Christ were not to die until they had seen the kingdom. Mark 9:1 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.
4. When one is born again he enters the kingdom. John 3:3-5 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. <sup>4</sup>Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? <sup>5</sup>Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
5. The people at Colosse were translated into the kingdom of God's dear Son. Colossians 1:13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated *us* into the kingdom of his dear Son.
6. John was in the kingdom. Revelation 1:9 I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.
7. The Lord's Supper was to be observed in the kingdom, but it could only be observed until Jesus comes back. Luke 22:17,18 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide *it* among yourselves: <sup>18</sup>For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come. 1 Corinthians 11:23-26 For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the *same* night in which he was betrayed took bread: <sup>24</sup> And when he had given thanks, he brake *it*, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. <sup>25</sup>After the same manner also *he took* the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink *it*, in remembrance of me. <sup>26</sup>For

as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come.

8. Jesus gave Peter the keys to the kingdom. If he did not use the keys during his lifetime, then the keys were useless. Matthew 26:18,19 And he said, Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand; I will keep the Passover at thy house with my disciples. <sup>19</sup>And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them; and they made ready the Passover.
9. John the Baptist taught that the kingdom of heaven was at hand. If it was not, then he was a false teacher. Matthew 3:1,2 In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea, <sup>2</sup>And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.
10. Jesus taught that the kingdom of heaven was at hand. If it was not, then Jesus was a false teacher. Matthew 4:17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.
11. The disciples taught that the kingdom of heaven was at hand. If it was not, then they were false teachers. Matthew 10:7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.
12. The ten virgins were in the kingdom before the second coming. Matt. 25:1-13. Matthew 25:1 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.
13. The man with one talent was in the kingdom before his master returned. Matt. 25:14-30. Matthew 25:14 For *the kingdom of heaven* is as a man traveling into a far country, *who* called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods.
14. The gospel that we are preach is the gospel of the kingdom. Matthew 24:14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.
15. Preachers in the first century preached the kingdom. Acts 8:12 But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

16. Jesus is king of kings and Lord of lords now, but one cannot be a king without a kingdom. Revelation 19:16 And he hath on *his* vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.
17. They will be separated from the bad which are in the kingdom at the second coming. Matthew 13:47-50 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: <sup>48</sup>Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. <sup>49</sup>So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, <sup>50</sup>And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.
18. Jesus will deliver the kingdom back to the Father at the second coming. 1 Corinthians 15:24 Then *cometh* the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.
19. The Lord's kingdom is not of this world (earthly kingdom). John 18:36 Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.
20. The good seed brings forth the children of the kingdom. Matthew 13: 38 The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*.
21. All the parables that relate to the kingdom of heaven have been understood for years to apply to the church.
22. A kingdom is comprised of:
  - a. King; Rev. 19:16.
  - b. Law; Matt. 24:14.
  - c. Territory; Matt. 16:15.
  - d. Subjects (those born again); Jn. 3:3-5; Col. 1:13.
  - e. All of the aforementioned facts are true today.

23. We are to seek first the kingdom of God. Matthew 6:33 But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.
24. The brethren of the first century received a kingdom that could not be moved. Hebrews 12:28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear. Daniel 2:44 And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, *but* it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.
25. All of the identifying marks of the kingdom in Isaiah 2 are fulfilled in Acts 2.
26. The judgment follows death and not the establishment of a kingdom. Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.
27. 1 Chronicles 17:11-15 And it shall come to pass, when thy days be expired that thou must go *to be* with thy fathers, that I will raise up thy seed after thee, which shall be of thy sons; and I will establish his kingdom. <sup>12</sup>He shall build me an house, and I will stablish his throne for ever. <sup>13</sup>I will be his father, and he shall be my son: and I will not take my mercy away from him, as I took *it* from *him* that was before thee: <sup>14</sup>But I will settle him in mine house and in my kingdom for ever: and his throne shall be established for evermore. <sup>15</sup>According to all these words, and according to all this vision, so did Nathan speak unto David.

**This was fulfilled in Acts chapter 2.** Acts 2:29-34 Men *and* brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. <sup>30</sup>Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne; <sup>31</sup>He seeing this before spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption. <sup>32</sup>This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses. <sup>33</sup>Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear. <sup>34</sup>For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he saith himself, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand.

B. Rapture.

1. Introduction.

- a. One of the most widely held doctrines of today is the rapture.
- b. Many books have been written on the rapture like: *The Late Great Planet Earth*, by Hal Lindsey.
- c. The idea of the rapture is that Christ will soon appear and snatch away the saved from the earth.
- d. They tell of men awakening and finding their wives and children gone.
- e. Others at work suddenly disappear from their machines and desks.
- f. Some drivers and pilots supposedly vanish, causing many wrecks and crashes.
- g. Generally, chaos is pictured as resulting.
- h. Remember the word rapture is not a Bible word!

2. Too new to be true.

- a. As popular and common as this teaching has become, few people realize how relatively new it is.
- b. Although "historic" premillennialism (also false) has been around longer, dispensational premillennialism (from which comes the rapture idea) is usually dated as beginning with John N. Darby in about 1830.
- c. One writer claims the two-stage idea of Christ's coming was begun by a Miss Margaret MacDonald in Scotland a few years earlier, but none seem to be able to trace it back before the 1800's.
- d. This should be sufficient reason to reject this doctrine. It started over 1,700 years too late to be from God.

3. The dispensational premillennial theory explained.

- a. Dispensationalists generally teach that all human history falls into seven divisions, or dispensations.
- b. They say that we are now living in the sixth dispensation called the dispensation of “Grace,” or “The Church Age.”
- c. They expect the final, seventh dispensation to be a thousand years in duration and refer to it as “The Kingdom,” or “The Millennium.”
- d. According to dispensational teaching, the dispensation of Grace (or, Church Age) is ready to end.
- f. It is to end with the supposed rapture.
- g. At the rapture the righteous dead will be raised and, along with the living righteous, will be caught up to meet the Lord in the air.
- h. The great tribulation will supposedly occur on earth at this time.
- i. During the first part of this period the Jews in Palestine are to make a covenant with the Antichrist, rebuild the temple, begin anew its rituals and sacrifices, and be influential in converting a great number.
- j. In the middle of this seven-year period, the Antichrist is to break this covenant and demand to be worshiped.
- k. Great persecution is to ensue, resulting in the death of many of these tribulation saints.
- l. At the end of the seven-year period, Christ will come with the raptured saints (in what they call the “revelation”) and fight the battle of Armageddon, destroying the Antichrist.
- m. There is to then be a resurrection of the dead tribulation saints and the judgment of the nations.
- n. This is to begin the Millennium, during which time Christ rules on David’s literal throne in Jerusalem.

- o. At the end of the thousand years, Satan is to be loosed for a little while.
  - p. Then the wicked are to be resurrected and judged in what they call the “Great White Throne Judgment.”
  - q. This brings them to the eternal condition of mankind.
4. 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 as a proof text?
- a. Often those who teach the rapture, try to use 1 Thess. 4:13-18 as a proof text.
  - b. Notice what the verses say: 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope. <sup>14</sup>For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him. <sup>15</sup>For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive *and* remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. <sup>16</sup>For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: <sup>17</sup>Then we which are alive *and* remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. <sup>18</sup>Wherefore comfort one another with these words.
  - c. Does this sound like their doctrine of the rapture?
  - d. Notice, this is not a secret coming; look at the words in the verses which I have emphasized.
  - e. Also notice, that those that the Lord is bringing with him are not the raptured, but those who are asleep in Jesus.
  - f. These will be raised first before the living (who have been changed) ascend up to be with the Lord. Both groups go up together!
  - g. These verses address the glorious hope that the dead in Christ have.



- 4) Jesus tells us that *the good seed are the children of the kingdom* and *the tares are the children of the wicked one* (verse 38). The harvest is the end of the world (verse 39). Instead of the saved being raptured from the earth over a thousand years before the wicked are judged, this scripture teaches that both will “grow together” until the end of the world. In fact, when the harvest (the end of the world) does come, it is the wicked not the righteous who are dealt with first according to these verses.
- 5) The *C. I. Scofield Reference Bible* has been an important tool of the dispensationalists for propagating their brand of premillennialism. It has extensive footnotes and references to accomplish this. It is interesting to notice his comments on this parable. Regarding verse 30 which says, “Gather ye together first the tares” he says, “at the end of this age (verse 40) the tares are set apart for burning, but first the wheat is gathered into the barn.” He switched “first” from “the tares” in the Bible text to “the wheat” in his comments!

b. Separate resurrections of the good and evil.

- 1) They claim that there are three resurrections, one for the righteous at the rapture, a second one at the end of the seventh year for the martyred righteous, and a thousand years later the resurrection of the wicked.
- 2) John 5:28,29 Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, <sup>29</sup>And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

c. A secret coming.

- 1) A secret coming of the Lord is demanded by the theory, but no such coming is taught in the Bible.
- 2) Acts 1:11 Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

- d. Two future comings of Christ are demanded by the dispensationalists.
- 1) They call one of these “the rapture” and the other “the revelation.”
  - 2) Jesus said that he would come again. He did not say, “I will come again and again.”
  - 3) John 14:3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, *there* ye may be also.
  - 4) Hebrews 9:28 So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation.
- e. A great tribulation period as they teach in not found in the Bible.
- 1) True, times of tribulation are mentioned in several passages, but no such period at the end of the age is taught in the Bible.
  - 2) They misuse Matthew 24:16-21 Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains: <sup>17</sup>Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house: <sup>18</sup>Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. <sup>19</sup>And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! <sup>20</sup>But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day: <sup>21</sup>For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.
- f. The antichrist concept of premillennialism is foreign to the scriptures.
- 1) “Anti” means against, so the antichrist is against Christ.
  - 2) The term is never used in the Bible to mean just one man who is a leader of the forces of evil.

- 3) 1 John 2:18 Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.
  - 4) The premillennial people, in days gone by, have declared the following people to be the antichrist: various popes, Hitler, Mussolini, Stalin, Henry Kissinger and a host of others.
  - 5) When they are shown to be wrong, they just choose another name.
  - 6) That they have been shown to be false prophets does not seem to bother their followers, but listen to what God has to say: Deuteronomy 18:22 When a prophet speaketh in the name of the LORD, if the thing follow not, nor come to pass, that *is* the thing which the LORD hath not spoken, *but* the prophet hath spoken it presumptuously: thou shalt not be afraid of him.
- g. The battle of Armageddon, as a coming confrontation between the forces of the antichrist and those of Christ at his coming, is foreign to scriptures.
- 1) Revelation 16:15,16 Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed *is* he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.  
<sup>16</sup>And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.
  - 2) The warfare that God and his followers are involved in is not carnal: 2 Corinthians 10:3,4 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: <sup>4</sup>(For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds).
  - 3) Ephesians 6:17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.
  - 4) God does not need men to fight physical warfares for Him: 2 Kings 19:35 And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the LORD went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and five

thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they *were* all dead corpses.

- h. That the kingdom will begin when Christ comes again is a concept that is exactly opposite from the Bible teaching.
  - 1) Colossians 1:13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated *us* into the kingdom of his dear Son.
  - 2) Revelation 1:9 I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.
  - 3) Mark 9:1 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.
  - 4) Matthew 16:18,19 And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. <sup>19</sup>And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.
- i. Several days of judgment are taught by the dispensationalists.
  - 1) Some list as many as seven different judgment days.
  - 2) All dispensationalists have at least three judgment days:
    - a) At the rapture,
    - b) One for the nations at the end of the claimed seven-year tribulation period and
    - c) One for the wicked at the end of the claimed millennium.

- 3) The Bible always speaks the judgment day in the singular.
- 4) Matthew 10:15 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city.
- 5) Matthew 11:22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you.
- 6) Acts 17:31 Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by *that* man whom he hath ordained; *whereof* he hath given assurance unto all *men*, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

6. Bible emphasis on the last day.

a. The second coming will be on the last day.

- 1) The premillennialists confuse the terms “last day” and “last days.”
- 2) The “last days” were already here when the church began on the day of Pentecost (see Acts 2:16,17: Hebrews 1:1,2).
- 3) Notice, the second coming will be on the “last day.” John 12:48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.
- 4) Christ will come when the judgment occurs (Matt. 25: 31ff).

b. All the dead shall be raised on the last day.

- 1) John 5:28,29 Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, <sup>29</sup>And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

- 2) See also: John 6:39,40,44,54; and 11:24.
- c. The judgment will be on the last day.
    - 1) John 12:48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.
  - d. All humanity will be sent to their eternal destinies on the last day.
    - 1) We have already noticed the judgment will be on the last day (John 12:48).
    - 2) So, all will receive their eternal reward on that day.
    - 3) Matthew 25:46 And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.
  - e. The earth will be destroyed at the last day.
    - 1) 2 Peter 3:10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.<sup>52</sup>

### C. Armageddon.

1. Revelation 16:15,16 Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed *is* he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. 16 And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.
2. 2 Corinthians 10:3-5 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: <sup>4</sup>(For the weapons of our warfare *are* not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) <sup>5</sup>Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.

---

<sup>52</sup> Some of this material taken from a tract by Joe E. Galloway on the Rapture.

3. What would Christ prove if he defeated the devil in a carnal warfare?
4. The Megiddo valley is too small to accommodate the population of the world.

D. Revelation 20.

1. It does not mention the second coming of Christ.
2. It does not mention a bodily resurrection.
3. It does not mention a reign on earth.
4. It does not mention a literal throne of David.
5. It does not mention Jerusalem or Palestine.
6. It does not mention us.
7. It does not mention Christ on earth.

E. Consequences of premillennialism.

1. That one does not need Bible authority for what he teaches.
  - a. Colossians 3:17 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, *do* all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.
  - b. 1 Thessalonians 5:21 Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.
  - c. 1 Peter 4:11 If any man speak, *let him speak* as the oracles of God; if any man minister, *let him do it* as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.
  - d. The law of rationality says, that we must draw only those conclusions which are warranted by the evidence.
  - e. They might declare, "We have Bible evidence for what we believe!"

- f. Then we ask:
- 1) Where does the Bible mention the rapture?
  - 2) Where does the Bible teach that Christ and His followers will become involved in a literal warfare? The Catholics and Protestants have tried this for years.
  - 3) Where does the Bible teach that Christ will ever set one foot back on this earth again?
  - 4) Where does the Bible teach that there will be signs that will lead up to the coming of our Lord? (A man wanted me to help him get people ready for the Lord's coming on January 1, 1984. Another man wrote a book entitled: *88 Reasons The Lord Might Return In 88*. One person declared on the *Arise To Truth* radio program that the Lord would rapture His people off this earth on Sept. 1, 1989 at 1:23 PM.)
  - 5) We could go on and on with the questions of where are the various principles of premillennialism found in the Bible, but we must proceed with these lessons.

2. That prophecies can be wrong.

- a. All premillennial teachers I know anything about admit that the kingdom prophecies of the Old Testament applied to the first coming of Christ. However, they had to be put off. Therefore, they did not come to pass.
- b. Some prophecies are limited by time such as Daniel 2:44, "and in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom..."
  - 1) Babylonian, Medo-Persian, Grecian, Roman empires.
  - 2) The kingdom had to be established during one of these empires.
  - 3) They realize this and state that the Roman empire will be restored.

- c. What about this prophecy? Mark 9:1 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.
3. That God does not keep His promises.
- a. They say that God promised the promise land to Abraham and his seed, but the promise has not been fulfilled.
- b. Joshua 21:43 And the LORD gave unto Israel **all the land** which he sware to give unto their fathers; **and they possessed it, and dwelt therein.**
- c. Joshua 23:14 And, behold, this day I *am* going the way of all the earth: and ye know in all your hearts and in all your souls, that not one thing hath failed of all the good things which the LORD your God spake concerning you; all are come to pass unto you, **and not one thing hath failed thereof.**
- d. Nehemiah 9:7,8 Thou *art* the LORD the God, who didst choose Abram, and broughtest him forth out of Ur of the Caldees, and gavest him the name of Abraham; <sup>8</sup>And foundest his heart faithful before thee, and madest a covenant with him to give the land of the Canaanites, the Hittites, the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Jebusites, and the Girgashites, to give *it, I say*, to his seed, **and hast performed thy words;** for thou *art* righteous.
- e. Titus 1:2 In hope of eternal life, **which God, that cannot lie,** promised before the world began.
4. That God does not know all things.
- a. Jeremiah 23:23,24 *Am* I a God at hand, saith the LORD, and not a God afar off? <sup>24</sup>Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the LORD.
- b. Isaiah 46:9,10 Remember the former things of old: for I *am* God, and *there is* none else; *I am* God, and *there is* none like me, <sup>10</sup>Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times *the things* that are not *yet* done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure.

- c. Did God get His time table right? Galatians 4:4 But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law.
  - 1) Alexander the Great had hellenized the world.
  - 2) Rome had built roads almost everywhere.
  - 3) The synagogue had made evangelism much easier.
  
- 5. That the death of Christ was an accident.
  - a. Acts 3:17,18 And now, brethren, I wot that through ignorance ye did *it*, as *did* also your rulers. <sup>18</sup>But those things, which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.
  - b. Revelation 13:8 And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.
  - c. 1 Peter 1:19,20 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot: <sup>20</sup>Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you.
  - d. Ephesians 1:4 According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love.
  - e. How could we be chosen if there was not a sacrifice for our sins?
  - f. Do not forget Isa. 53!
  
- 6. That the church was an accident.
  - a. Ephesians 3:9-11 And to make all *men* see what *is* the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: <sup>10</sup>To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly *places* might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, <sup>11</sup>According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord.

- b. Is Christ the head of the church by accident? Are both Jew and gentile reconciled in the church by accident?
7. That the gospel was not planned.
- a. Jeremiah 31:31-33 Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: <sup>32</sup>Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day *that* I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: <sup>33</sup>But this *shall be* the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people.
  - b. 1 Corinthians 15:1-3 Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; <sup>2</sup>By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain. <sup>3</sup>For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures.
8. That Christ and others were false teachers.
- a. Matthew 3:2 And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.
  - b. Matthew 4:17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.
  - c. Matthew 10:5-7 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any city of the Samaritans enter ye not:* <sup>6</sup>*But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.* <sup>7</sup>*And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.*
  - d. They might argue that “at hand” did not mean very soon: Mark 9:1 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

9. That the Lord's Supper is a memorial to God's failures.
  - a. According to them, Jesus came here to establish his kingdom, but he could not do that. Therefore, he had to do the next best thing by dying on the cross.
  - b. The cross was God's "spare tire" according to one preacher.
  - c. The Jews seemed to have won at this time. But can they not win ultimately?
  - d. According to the consequences of premillennialism the Lord's Supper would remind us that God erred.
  - e. But God used His great knowledge and foresight to put the answer in the Bible: Luke 22:16 For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. Compare 1 Cor. 11:23-34.

10. That the new birth cannot be taught today.

- a. John 3:3-5 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. <sup>4</sup>Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? <sup>5</sup>Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
- b. They must give up the new birth or their false doctrine of premillennialism.
- c. One cannot believe this ungodly doctrine and expect to go to heaven!

F. Hadean realm.

1. The Jehovah's Witnesses and others deny the hadean world.
2. Luke 16:19-31 There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: <sup>20</sup>And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, <sup>21</sup>And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his

sores. <sup>22</sup>And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; <sup>23</sup>And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. <sup>24</sup>And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. <sup>25</sup>But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. <sup>26</sup>And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence. <sup>27</sup>Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: <sup>28</sup>For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. <sup>29</sup>Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. <sup>30</sup>And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. <sup>31</sup>And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

## G. Matthew 24.

### 1. Introduction.

- a. Some have suggested that Matthew chapter twenty-four is the most abused chapter of the entire Bible.
- b. This chapter has been a "sugar stick" for those who contend upon weaving the web of premillennialism. They *find* the rapture, the seven-year tribulation period, signs for current times and so forth.
- c. *"What do present world conditions mean? Jesus Christ foretold that widespread wars, food shortages, earthquakes, pestilence and lawlessness would mark the end of the age (Matt. 24:3,7,12)"* Excerpt from Jehovah's Witness tract.
- d. Jesus gave this discourse just a few days before He was crucified (see Matt. 21 the entry into Jerusalem and His statement in Matt. 26:2). The year would have been about A.D. 33.

### 2. Background to this chapter.

- a. Jesus foretold Jerusalem's destruction.
    - 1) Luke 19:41-44; upon entering Jerusalem.
    - 2) Luke 23:27-31; while being led away to be crucified.
  - b. Context of Matthew chapter twenty four.
    - 1) Matt. 23:1-33; Jesus denounces the actions of the Scribes and Pharisees.
    - 2) Matt. 23:34-39; Gives a direct warning of Jerusalem's destruction.
3. The magnificent temple and its buildings.
- a. Background.
    - 1) Solomon's beautiful temple destroyed by Babylon in 586 B.C.
    - 2) Rebuilt after a seventy year exile. The old men who remembered Solomon's temple wept!
    - 3) Desecrated during the "inter-biblical" period.
    - 4) Herod the Great remodeled and added on to the temple in a marvelous manner.
  - b. The apostles show Jesus the temple and its buildings.
    - 1) Matthew 24:1 And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to *him* for to shew him the buildings of the temple.
    - 2) Mark 13:1.
    - 3) *"..were several stones which were 45 cubits in length, 5 cubits in height, and 6 cubits in breadth;"* Josephus, Jewish Historian (In feet this would be 67.5 x 7.5 x 9.)
  - c. The reply of Jesus.
    - 1) Matthew 24:2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not

be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

- 2) Matthew 24:3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world? (The questions asked by the disciples.)
  - a) When shall these things be?
  - b) What shall be the sign of thy coming?
  - c) What sign shall there be of the end of the world?
- 3) Mark 13:3,4; Luke 21:7 (appears as only *two* questions).
- 4) Those present: Mark 13:3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately.

4. The time frame when the first of “these things” was to be fulfilled.
  - a. Matthew 23:36 Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.
  - b. Matthew 24:34 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.
  - c. Jesus describes many things which would tell “when” the temple buildings would be destroyed.
    - 1) Matt. 24:6 “...For all these things must come to pass...”
    - 2) Matt. 24:8 “All these are the beginning of sorrows.”
    - 3) Matt. 24:33 “So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know it is near, even at the doors.”
  - d. Jesus placed a definite time frame when all “these” things would be fulfilled.

- 1) Matt. 24:34,35.
  - 2) Everything from verse four to these verses must be limited to that generation!
5. The discourse of Jesus.
- a. Many will try to deceive.
    - 1) Matthew 24:4,5 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. <sup>5</sup>For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.
    - 2) *“The land was overrun with magicians, seducers, and impostors, who drew the people after them in multitudes into solitude and deserts, to see the signs and miracles which they promised to show by the power of God.” Josephus.*
  - b. There will be wars and rumors of wars.
    - 1) Matthew 24:6 And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all *these things* must come to pass, but the end is not yet.
    - 2) *“At the time He made it (this statement) there was peace within the Roman Empire. Shortly after the Olivet prophecy Palestine and other parts of the Roman Empire were engulfed in strife, insurrection and wars.” Roy Deaver*
  - c. There will be famines, pestilence and earthquakes.
    - 1) Matthew 24:7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places.
    - 2) Acts 11:28 And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit that there should be great dearth throughout all the world: which came to pass in the days of Claudius Caesar.
  - d. Christians would be persecuted.

- 1) Matthew 24:9,10 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. <sup>10</sup>And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.
  - 2) Acts 7:54-60; death of Stephen.
  - 3) Acts 12; death of James; imprisonment of Peter.
  - 4) Acts 23-28; Paul's imprisonment.
  - 5) Notice, that Christians would go through this persecution.
- e. Enduring to the end.
- 1) Matthew 24:12-14 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. <sup>13</sup>But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. <sup>14</sup>And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.
  - 2) In context the "end" is not the end of the world, but of the destruction of Jerusalem and the end of the Jewish Nation.
  - 3) Colossians 1:23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and *be* not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, *and* which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister; (Gospel had been preached unto all world).
- f. "When ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken by Daniel..."
- 1) Matthew 24:15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand).

- 2) Daniel 9:23-27 At the beginning of thy supplications the commandment came forth, and I am come to shew *thee*; for thou *art* greatly beloved: therefore understand the matter, and consider the vision. <sup>24</sup>Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. <sup>25</sup>Know therefore and understand, *that* from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince *shall be* seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. <sup>26</sup>And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof *shall be* with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined. <sup>27</sup>And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make *it* desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.
- 3) Luke 21:20 And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

g. Flee into the mountains.

- 1) Matthew 24:16-20 Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains: <sup>17</sup> Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house: <sup>18</sup>Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. <sup>19</sup>And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! <sup>20</sup>But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day.
- 2) This could only make sense referring to Jerusalem's destruction!

- h. Great tribulation.
- 1) Matthew 24:21,22 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. <sup>22</sup>And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.
  - 2) *"And now, rushing into the city, they slew whomsoever they found, without distinction, and burned the houses and all the people who had fled into them; and when they entered for the sake of plunder, they found whole families of dead persons, and houses full of carcasses destroyed by famine,...And though they thus pitied the dead, they had not the same emotion for the living, but killed all they met, whereby they filled the lanes with dead bodies. The whole city ran with blood, insomuch that many things which were burning were extinguished by the blood."* Jewish Wars , Josephus.
  - 3) Many were crucified: *"..were first whipped, then tormented with various kinds of tortures, and finally crucified; the Roman soldiers nailing them (due to the wrath and hatred they bore to the Jews), one after one way and another after another, to crosses, by way of jest, until at length the multitude became so great that room was wanting for crosses, and crosses for the bodies."* Jewish Wars ,Josephus.
  - 4) Josephus said the number of the slain was above "eleven hundred thousand."
  - 5) Matthew 27:25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children. (Did they know what they were saying?)
- i. False Christs shall appear.
- 1) Matthew 24:23-28 Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here *is* Christ, or there; believe *it* not. <sup>24</sup>For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if *it were* possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

<sup>25</sup>Behold, I have told you before. <sup>26</sup>Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, *he is* in the secret chambers; believe *it* not. <sup>27</sup>For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. <sup>28</sup>For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

2) The Jews expected the "Savior" to come and deliver them!

j. Immediately after the tribulation of those days.

1) Matthew 24:29-31 Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: <sup>30</sup>And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. <sup>31</sup>And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

2) Isa. 13:1,9,10 The burden of Babylon, which Isaiah the son of Amoz did see...Behold, the day of the LORD cometh, cruel both with wrath and fierce anger, to lay the land desolate: and he shall destroy the sinners thereof out of it. For the stars of heaven and the constellations thereof shall not give their light: the sun shall be darkened in his going forth, and the moon shall not cause her light to shine.

3) Isa. 19:1 The burden of Egypt. Behold, the Lord rideth upon a swift cloud, and shall come into Egypt.

4) Ezek 32:2,7,8 Son of man, take up a lamentation for Pharaoh king of Egypt, .....And when I shall put thee out, I will cover the heaven, and make the stars thereof dark; I will cover the sun with a cloud, and the moon shall not give her light. All the bright lights of heaven will I make dark over thee, and set darkness upon thy land, saith the Lord GOD.

- 5) Amos 5:1-20 Hear ye this word which I take up against you, even a lamentation, O house of Israel... Shall not the day of the LORD be darkness, and not light? even very dark, and no brightness in it?
- k. Signs given.
- 1) Matthew 24:32,33 Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer *is* nigh: <sup>33</sup>So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, *even* at the doors.
  - 2) Luke 12:40 Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not. (We do not know when Jesus will come , no signs given!).
6. Jesus addresses the end of time.
- a. No man knows when that day will come.
- 1) Matthew 24:36-42 But of that day and hour knoweth no *man*, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only. <sup>37</sup>But as the days of Noe *were*, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. <sup>38</sup>For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, <sup>39</sup>And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. <sup>40</sup>Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. <sup>41</sup>Two *women shall be* grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left. <sup>42</sup>Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.
  - 2) Mark 13:32 But of that day and *that* hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. (Even Jesus did not know!)
- b. The need to be prepared.
- 1) Matthew 24:43-51 But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have

suffered his house to be broken up. <sup>44</sup>Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh. <sup>45</sup>Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? <sup>46</sup>Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. <sup>47</sup>Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. <sup>48</sup>But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delay-eth his coming; <sup>49</sup>And shall begin to smite *his* fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; <sup>50</sup>The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and in an hour that he is not aware of, <sup>51</sup>And shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

2) Matt. 25:1-46.

7. Conclusion.

- a. While some passages are difficult in this chapter the basic meaning must be intentionally twisted to *make* it teach the premillennial doctrine.
- b. See Chart.<sup>53</sup> \* Chart taken from J. Marcellus Kik

**\*MATTHEW 24:1-35**

**MATTHEW 24:36-25:46**

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Relates specific signs in relation to regard to judgment upon Jerusalem.</li> <li>2. Gives the impression of abnormal times: wars famines, pestilence, earthquakes, persecution, great tribulation.</li> <li>3. Is concerned with “those” days.</li> <li>4. Limits judgment to Palestine.</li> <li>5. Contains warnings to be prepared.</li> </ul> | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Specific signs are absent in the final judgment.</li> <li>2. Gives the impression of normal peaceful world: eating, drinking, marrying.</li> <li>3. Is concerned with “that” day.</li> <li>4. Judgment embraces all.</li> <li>5. Has no warnings except an admonition to be prepared.</li> </ul> |
|--|--|

---

<sup>53</sup> Some of this material borrowed from a sermon on Matthew 24 by David Irick.

6. The saints are warned to flee into the mountains.

6. The saints are taken up. Nowhere to flee.

H. Heaven.

1. The Mormons teach there are three heavens.
2. The Jehovah's Witnesses teach that paradise is here on earth. They believe that only the elect (144,000) will get to go to heaven.

I. Hell.

**Jehovah's Witnesses:** "So when Jesus said that persons would be thrown into Gehenna for their bad deeds, what did he mean? Not that they would be tormented forever."<sup>54</sup>

**Jehovah's Witnesses:** "It is so plain that the Bible hell is the tomb, the grave, that even an honest little child can understand it..."<sup>55</sup>

**Jehovah's Witnesses:** "The doctrine of a burning hell where the wicked are tortured eternally after death cannot be true, mainly for four reasons: (1) Because it is wholly unscriptural, (2) Because it is unreasonable, (3) Because it is contrary to God's love, and (4) Because it repugnant to justice."<sup>56</sup>

**Mormons:** "...Only reprobate Mormons will go to hell"<sup>57</sup>

1. How some view hell:
  - a. Many want to deny its existence.
  - b. The Jehovah's Witnesses say that the wicked will be annihilated.
  - c. Catholics have invented purgatory.
  - d. Some Baptists have begun to question the existence of hell.
  - e. Garner Ted Armstrong (previously with Worldwide Church of God) denies hell.

---

<sup>54</sup> The Truth that leads to Eternal Life, p. 44.

<sup>55</sup> Let God Be True, p.72,73.

<sup>56</sup> Let God Be True, p.80.

<sup>57</sup> Mormon Elder, Stated in a personal Bible study. 1996.

- f. The Universalist say that God is too good to let anyone go to hell.
  - g. Skeptics say that hell is a contradiction of certain concepts.
  - h. Atheists say that hell was invented by religious people for the express purpose of keeping people in line.
  - i. The Mormons have three heavens to which man goes.
  - j. Some religious groups teach a doctrine of a second chance.
  - k. Preachers have quit preaching on hell.
2. The description of hell:
- a. Everlasting fire, Matt. 25:41.
  - b. Eternal punishment, Matt. 25:46.
  - c. Eternal destruction, 2 Thess. 1:8,9.
  - d. Lake of fire, Rev. 20:14,15.
  - e. Place of torment, Luke 16:23.
  - f. Place of outer darkness, Matt. 25:30.
  - g. Place where the fire is not quenched, Mark 9:43.
  - h. Place of fire and brimstone, Rev. 20:10.
3. The inhabitants of hell:
- a. The devil and his angels, Matt. 25:41.
  - b. Those who obey not the gospel, 2 Thess. 1:6-9.
  - c. Those who practice wickedness, Rev. 21:8.
  - d. The disobedient, Rom. 2:8,9.
  - e. Unfaithful Christians, 2 Pet. 2:20-22.

- f. Those who work iniquity, Matt. 7:21-23.
4. Objections to hell:
- a. God is too loving to send anyone to hell.
  - b. If there is a hell, then Christ went to hell, Acts 2:31.
  - c. There cannot be a hell because one would burn up.
    - 1) Moses and the burning bush. Exodus 3:2-4.
    - 2) Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, Daniel 3.
5. The Greek words translated hell:
- a. Gehenna: the eternal torment, Matt 5:22,29,30; 10:28; 18:9; 23:15-33; Mark 9:43-47; Luke 12:5; James 3:6.
  - b. Hades: the unseen world, Matt 11:23; 16:18; Luke 10:15; 16:23; Acts 2:27-31; Rev 1:18; 6:8; 20:13,14.
  - c. Tartarus: to cast down, 2 Pet. 2:4.
  - d. These three words are translated as hell in many English Bibles.<sup>58</sup>
- J. The earth will not be destroyed.

**Jehovah's Witnesses:** "Made into a paradise where righteousness prevails, the earth will serve for all time to come as a jewel of praise to Jehovah's name"<sup>59</sup>

- 1. 2 Peter 3:10-12 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. <sup>11</sup> *Seeing* then *that* all these things shall be dissolved, what manner *of persons* ought ye to be in *all* holy conversation and godliness, <sup>12</sup> Looking for and hastening unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?

---

<sup>58</sup> Some of this material borrowed from a sermon on hell by Eddy Craft.

<sup>59</sup> The Truth that leads to Eternal Life, p. 113.

K. Purgatory.

**Lutherans:** “Those who assert that a soul straightway flies out (of purgatory) as a coin tinkles in the collection, box are preaching an invention of man.”<sup>60</sup>

1. This doctrine is a reflection upon the atonement of our Lord.
2. The Catholics teach that none of us are perfect. Therefore, there must be a payment made on our part in purgatory.
3. The Catholics see Luke 16:19ff as purgatory.

**XVIII. FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE MIRACULOUS.**

A. One must be baptized with the Holy Spirit to be saved. How can this be true if:

1. There is but one baptism. Ephesians 4:5 One Lord, one faith, one baptism.
  - a. John’s baptism. Matthew 3:11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance:..... Luke 3:3 And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins.
  - b. Holy Spirit baptism. Luke 3:16 John answered, saying unto *them* all, I indeed baptize you with water; but one mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire.
  - c. Fire. Matt 3:11; Luke 3:16.
  - d. Moses. 1 Corinthians 10:1,2 Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; <sup>2</sup>And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea.
  - e. Suffering. Matthew 20:22,23 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able. <sup>23</sup>And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be

---

<sup>60</sup> Martin Luther, One of the 95 objections nailed to the Castle Church in Whittenberg, Oct. 31, 1517.

baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Father.

- f. In water, in the name of Christ, for the remission of sins.  
Mark 16:16; Acts 2:38; Acts 22:16; Romans 6:1-6; Gal 3:27-29.
2. It was promised to only a select few.
  - a. John 16:13; 14:26; Acts 1:5-8.
  - b. Acts 10,11.
3. If it is/was not a command:
  - a. Luke 6:46.
  - b. John 14:15.
  - c. John 15:14.
  - d. Matthew 7:21.
4. If the purpose of the baptism of the Holy Spirit has been fulfilled:
  - a. John 16:13.
  - b. Mark 16:17-20.
  - c. Hebrews 2:1-4.
5. If it was not so in the first century:
  - a. Acts 8:12ff.
6. When “baptized with the Holy Spirit” people do:
  - a. Contradict the Bible.
  - b. Contradict one another.
  - c. Confuse people.
  - d. Confuse themselves.

- e. Trust their feelings.
  - f. Trust their so-called “baptism of the Holy Spirit” and forget about Bible authority.
7. If Holy Spirit baptism **was never** connected directly with:
- a. Remission of sin.
  - b. Blood of Christ.
  - c. Putting one into Christ.
  - d. New birth.
8. If Holy Spirit baptism **was** connected with:
- a. Apostles, John 16:13, Acts 1:5-8.
  - b. Cornelius, Acts 10,11.
  - c. Revelation, John 16:13.
  - d. Confirmation, Heb 2:1-4.

B. Tongue speaking:

1. Tongues under the limited commission. Matthew 10:5-8 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritans enter ye not: <sup>6</sup>But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. <sup>7</sup>And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. <sup>8</sup>Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.
2. Tongues under the great commission. Mark 16:15-18 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. <sup>16</sup>He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. <sup>17</sup>And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; <sup>18</sup>They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

3. The Bible definition of the gift of tongues.

a. Acts 2:4-8 And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance. <sup>5</sup>And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. <sup>6</sup>Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language. <sup>7</sup>And they were all amazed and marveled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak Galileans? <sup>8</sup>And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born?

- 1) The apostles spoke in tongues, v. 4.
- 2) People were there from every nation, v. 5.
- 3) Every man heard them speak in his own language, v. 6.
- 4) The crowd marveled, saying one to another, behold are not all these which speak Galileans, v. 7.
- 5) Then the crowd ask “How hear we every man in our own tongue wherein we are born?”

b. 1 Corinthians 14.

- 1) The word *unknown* was added by the translators.
- 2) It is something that one speaks, v. 2. For he that speaketh in an *unknown* tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth *him*; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.
- 3) It can be interpreted, v. 5. I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater *is* he that prophesieth than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying.
- 4) It consists of words, v. 9. So likewise ye, except ye utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the air, v. 19 Yet in the church I had rather speak

five words with my understanding, that *by my voice* I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an *unknown* tongue.

- 5) The one speaking should even pray that he can interpret, v. 13. Wherefore let him that speaketh in an *unknown* tongue pray that he may interpret.
  - 6) It is compared to a foreign language of Isaiah's day, v. 21. In the law it is written, With *men of other tongues* and other lips will I speak unto this people; and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord. Cf. Isaiah 28:11,12.
  - 7) No more than two or three are to do it, and that by course, but only if one interprets, vv. 27,28. If any man speak in an *unknown* tongue, *let it be* by two, or at the most *by three*, and *that* by course; and let one interpret. <sup>28</sup>But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church; and let him speak to himself, and to God.
  - 8) From these facts we can see clearly that the "tongue" of 1 Corinthians chapter 14 is a language. This harmonizes beautifully with Acts 2.
4. Some of the reasons why I left the Church of God of Prophecy.
    - a. They spoke in tongues only when they were highly emotional.
    - b. They used the same phrases over and over. Is the Holy Spirit that limited in His vocabulary?
    - c. They spoke in tongues without an interpreter, 1 Cor. 14:27, 28.
    - d. The women were usually the ones doing the speaking in tongues. 1 Timothy 2:11,12 Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. <sup>12</sup>But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.
  5. Those who speak in tongues claim that it makes one more spiritual. If this is the case, then how do we explain all the problems encountered by the church at Corinth? 1 Cor. 3:1-3 And I, brethren, could

not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, *even* as unto babes in Christ. <sup>2</sup>I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able *to bear it*, neither yet now are ye able. <sup>3</sup>For ye are yet carnal: for whereas *there is* among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men?

6. Some versions of the Bible have added to the problem.
  - a. KJV - "unknown."
  - b. The New English Bible - "ecstasy and ecstatic utterance."
7. Tongues a sign for those who believe not. 1 Cor. 14:22 Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not: but prophesying *serveth* not for them that believe not, but for them which believe.
8. Tongue speaking has ceased. 1 Cor. 13:8-10 Charity never faileth: but whether *there be* prophecies, they shall fail; whether *there be* tongues, they shall cease; whether *there be* knowledge, it shall vanish away. <sup>9</sup>For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. <sup>10</sup>But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.
  - a. Mark 16:20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with *them*, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.
  - b. Hebrews 2:1-4 Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let *them* slip. <sup>2</sup>For if the word spoken by angels was steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense of reward; <sup>3</sup>How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard *him*; <sup>4</sup>God also bearing *them* witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will?
  - c. John 20:30,31 And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book: <sup>31</sup>But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.

- d. James 1:25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth *therein*, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.
9. Some say that without the gift of speaking in tongues one is not saved.
- a. Acts 8:12-17 But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. <sup>13</sup>Then Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were done. <sup>14</sup>Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John: <sup>15</sup>Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost: <sup>16</sup>(For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.) <sup>17</sup>Then laid they *their* hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.
  - b. Mark 16:16 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.
10. The fatal results of believing in modern day tongue speaking.
- a. It weakens respect for the Bible as man's only source of authority in religion, 2 Tim. 3:16,17; 2 Pet. 1:3-4. If the Bible is not the only authority, whose subjective feelings should we follow? those in Pentecostalism, Mormonism, etc.?
  - b. It leads to compromise with the gravest errors in other tongue speakers. If one accepts tongue speaking as a special direct gift of God, then he must admit that all tongue speakers are acceptable to God.
  - c. It leads to equating (subjective) experiences with the nearness of God, i.e., God is near only when one feels a certain way. This minimizes the place and importance of obedience. One can do God's will, and thus be near to God, regardless of his mood.
  - d. It leads the receiver to consider all others as second-class Christians whose burdens are almost unbearable. (See Keldahl, p.61.)

- e. It causes a total and absolute misunderstanding of the work of the Holy Spirit. The function of the Holy Spirit is to reveal truth, confirm the truth revealed...”<sup>61</sup>

C. Miracles still occur.

1. What is a miracle?

- a. Not just something unusual.
- b. That which supersedes the laws of nature.
- c. False miracles:
  - 1) Acts 8:9,10 But there was a certain man, called Simon, which beforetime in the same city used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one:<sup>10</sup>To whom they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.
  - 2) Matthew 7:21-23 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.<sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?<sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

2. Did Christ or the apostles ever fail in performing a miracle because of the lack of faith on the part of the one being healed?

- a. Closest to it: Matthew 17:14-21 And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a *certain* man, kneeling down to him, and saying,<sup>15</sup>Lord, have mercy on my son: for he is lunatic, and sore vexed: for oftentimes he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.<sup>16</sup>And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.<sup>17</sup>Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.<sup>18</sup>And Jesus rebuked the devil; and he departed

---

<sup>61</sup> Howard Winters, The Holy Spirit, (Win-More Publications, West Jefferson, North Carolina, 1976), p.48.

out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour.

<sup>19</sup>Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out? <sup>20</sup>And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. <sup>21</sup>Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.

- b. How much faith did the following have?
  - 1) Lazarus, John 11.
  - 2) Man at the gate called Beautiful, Acts 3.
3. What was the purpose of miracles?
  - a. Confirm the word: Mark 16:20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with *them*, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.
  - b. Show one was worthy of the gospel: Acts 10,11.
  - c. Reveal perfect message: John 16:13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.
  - d. Prove that Jesus was the Christ: Acts 2:22 Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know.
4. How did one receive power to perform miracles?
  - a. Directly from Christ by the Holy Spirit. Matt. 10.
  - b. Holy Spirit baptism. Acts 1:5 For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.
  - c. Laying on of hands. Acts 8:13-17 Then Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs

which were done. <sup>14</sup>Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John: <sup>15</sup>Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost: <sup>16</sup>(For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.) <sup>17</sup>Then laid they *their* hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.

5. What miracles were to be performed?
  - a. Limited commission: Matthew 10:6-8 But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. <sup>7</sup>And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. <sup>8</sup>Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.
  - b. Great commission: Mark 16:17,18 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; <sup>18</sup>They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.
6. How long were miracles to last?
  - a. 1 Corinthians 13:8-10 Charity never faileth: but whether *there be* prophecies, they shall fail; whether *there be* tongues, they shall cease; whether *there be* knowledge, it shall vanish away. <sup>9</sup>For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. <sup>10</sup>But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.
  - b. James 1:25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth *therein*, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.
  - c. John 20:30,31 And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book: <sup>31</sup>But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.
  - d. Until the last apostle died.

7. Do all miracle workers teach the same thing?
- a. 1 Corinthians 14:37 If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you are the commandments of the Lord.
    - 1) One church.
    - 2) Baptism for the remission of sins.
    - 3) Lord's Supper on the first day of the week.
    - 4) Women cannot teach over men.
    - 5) Miracles have ceased.
    - 6) Division is sinful.
  - b. 1 Corinthians 1:10-13 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and *that* there be no divisions among you; but *that* ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment. <sup>11</sup>For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them *which are of the house* of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. <sup>12</sup>Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. <sup>13</sup>Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?
  - c. Compare: Mormons, Jehovah's Witnesses, Catholics, PTL Club, Oral Roberts, Robert Tilton, Jimmy Swaggart, etc.
8. Did the ability to perform miracles in the first century show the strength of one's character?
- a. Simon Peter worked miracles: Luke 22:31,32 And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired *to have* you, that he may sift *you* as wheat: <sup>32</sup>But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.
  - b. Judas Iscariot worked miracles: John 17:12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.

- c. The church at Corinth worked miracles: 1 Corinthians 3:1-3 And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, *even* as unto babes in Christ. <sup>2</sup>I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able *to bear it*, neither yet now are ye able. <sup>3</sup>For ye are yet carnal: for whereas *there is* among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men?
  - d. Some people today who claim to have the Holy Spirit are the weakest people we know, Jimmy Bakker, Jimmy Swaggart, Tammy Faye, Robert Tilton, etc.
9. If one should show a sign, but teach something contrary to God's word, should we believe him?
- a. Deuteronomy 13:1-5 If there arise among you a prophet, or a dreamer of dreams, and giveth thee a sign or a wonder, <sup>2</sup>And the sign or the wonder come to pass, whereof he spake unto thee, saying, Let us go after other gods, which thou hast not known, and let us serve them; <sup>3</sup>Thou shalt not hearken unto the words of that prophet, or that dreamer of dreams: for the LORD your God proveth you, to know whether ye love the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul. <sup>4</sup>Ye shall walk after the LORD your God, and fear him, and keep his commandments, and obey his voice, and ye shall serve him, and cleave unto him. <sup>5</sup>And that prophet, or that dreamer of dreams, shall be put to death; because he hath spoken to turn *you* away from the LORD your God, which brought you out of the land of Egypt, and redeemed you out of the house of bondage, to thrust thee out of the way which the LORD thy God commanded thee to walk in. So shalt thou put the evil away from the midst of thee.
  - b. Galatians 1:6-9 I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: <sup>7</sup>Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. <sup>8</sup>But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. <sup>9</sup>As we said before, so say I now again, If any *man* preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed.

10. Objections.

a. We will do greater miracles than what Jesus did: John 14:12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater *works* than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

1) Not only can we not do greater miracles than what Jesus did, we cannot even name a greater miracle than Jesus did!

2) What miracle can you do greater than: raising the dead, giving sight to the blind, cleansing the lepers, walking on water, etc.

b. God and Christ never change. They worked miracles in the first century they are working miracles today. Hebrews 13:8 Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.

1) Does God still make man from the dust of the ground miraculously? Genesis 2:7 And the LORD God formed man *of* the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

2) Does God still make women out of ribs? Genesis 2:22 And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man.

c. The nature of God does not change, but He can change His method of doing a thing or He can change His law. Which He has done. Miracles have ceased!

11. Two great arguments prove that miracles have ceased:

a. The Bible says miracles have ceased, and

b. There is no one living who can perform a miracle. Case closed!

12. As goes the proposition, then so goes the demonstration; as goes the demonstration, then so goes the proposition. Case Closed!

D. Modern day revelation.

1. 2 Timothy 3:16,17 All scripture *is* given by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: <sup>17</sup>That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.
2. 2 Peter 1:3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that *pertain* unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue.
3. Acts 20:27 For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.
4. Whose modern day revelation are you going to believe?
  - a. Mary Baker Eddy—Christian Science.
  - b. The Pope—Catholics.
  - c. Charles Taze Russell—Jehovah’s Witnesses.
  - d. The book of Mormon—Joseph Smith.
  - e. Ellen G. White—Seventh-Day-Adventist.

**XIX. FALSE DOCTRINES CONCERNING THE ORGANIZATION OF THE CHURCH.**

A. Earthly headquarters.

1. Ephesians 1:22,23 And hath put all *things* under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the church, <sup>23</sup>Which is his body, the fullness of him that filleth all in all.
2. Some in Cleveland, Tennessee.
3. Salt Lake City, Utah.

B. Pastor system.

1. 1 Corinthians 4:6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and *to* Apollos for your sakes; that ye might learn in us not to think *of men* above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.

2. 1 Corinthians 1:13 Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?
- C. “Called preachers.”
1. I asked one of these preachers how he knew it was God who had called him?
- D. “One man rule” governments.
- E. Priest forgiving sins.
1. 1 Timothy 2:5 For *there is* one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.
  2. 1 Peter 2:9 But ye *are* a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvelous light.
- F. Pope.

**Catholic:** “Who is the visible Head of the Church? Our Holy Father the Pope, the Bishop of Rome, is the Vicar of Christ on earth and the visible Head of the Church.”<sup>62</sup>

## XX. FALSE DOCTRINES ON MORALS.

- A. Marriage—divorce—remarriage.
1. Polygamy.
    - a. Some Mormons still practice this.
    - b. 1 Corinthians 7:2 Nevertheless, *to avoid* fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.
  2. Marriage in heaven.
    - a. Matthew 22:30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.
    - b. Mormons teach that there will be marriages in heaven.

---

<sup>62</sup> Thomas O'Brien, An Advanced Catechism of Catholic Faith and Practice. P. 59.

3. All unscriptural marriages forgiven at baptism.
  - a. Baptism washes away sin, not unscriptural relationships.
  - b. Repentance means that one gives up unscriptural relationships.
4. The world is not subject to God's marriage laws.
5. The guilty party can remarry.
  - a. There is no Bible authority for the guilty party to remarry.
  - b. The only reason one can get married at all is because the Bible gives one that authority.
6. A person can divorce and remarry as many times as he so desires as long as he ask God to forgive him.
  - a. Matthew 19:9 And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery.
  - b. The committing of adultery in Matthew 19:9 is continuous action.
7. Perpetual virginity of Mary.

**Catholic:** "The church teaches us that she was always a Virgin , a Virgin before her espousal; during her married life; and after her spouse's death... in this sentiment all Catholic tradition concurs."<sup>63</sup>

- a. 1 Corinthians 7:2-5 Nevertheless, *to avoid* fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband. <sup>3</sup>Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband. <sup>4</sup>The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife. <sup>5</sup>Defraud ye not one the other, except *it be* with consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

---

<sup>63</sup> James Cardinal Gibbons, Faith of Our Fathers, p. 164.

- b. Mary would have sinned by withholding her body!
- c. Mark 6:3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

8. Priest cannot marry.

**Catholic:** "The earliest law enforcing celibacy was passed by the Council of Elvira in Spain about the year 300."<sup>64</sup>

- a. 1 Timothy 4:3 Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.
- b. Hebrews 13:4 Marriage *is* honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.
- c. 1 Corinthians 9:5 Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

B. Abortion.

- 1. Some say that a woman ought to have the right to do with her body whatever she wishes. (The baby is not her body.)
- 2. Some say the baby in the womb is just tissue. Matt. 1:18 Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. Luke 1:44 For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy.
- 3. What about the prostitute who argues it is her body and she ought to be able to do what she wishes with her body?

C. Homosexuality.

- 1. There are those who believe that one can be a practicing homosexual and be a faithful child of God.

---

<sup>64</sup> James Cardinal Gibbons, Faith of Our Fathers, p. 458.

2. Some churches have begun to ordain practicing homosexuals.
3. Romans 1:26,27 For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: <sup>27</sup>And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet.
4. Homosexuality is:
  - a. Against nature, Rom. 1:26,27.
  - b. Against God's way of procreation, Gen. 1:26,27.
  - c. Against God's design for marriage, Gen. 2:24,25.
  - d. Against society, 1 Cor. 6:9-11.
  - e. Against God's designed roles for men and women, 1 Tim. 2:1-15.

D. War.

**Mennonite:** "That we cannot apply our labor, money, business, factories, nor resources in any form to war of military ends, either in war finance or war industry, even under compulsion." <sup>65</sup>

E. Capital punishment.

**Quakers:** Their testimony against capital punishment is based on the belief that it is a violation of the sacredness of human personality, that it disregards the fundamental capacity of all persons to respond to right influences, and that it gives no opportunity to reform the offender." <sup>66</sup>

F. Once saved always saved.

1. **Sam Morris's** statement: "We take the position that a Christian's sins do not damn his soul. The way a Christian lives, what he says, his character, his conduct, or his attitude toward other people have nothing whatsoever to do with the salvation of his soul.....All the prayers a man may pray, all the Bibles he may read, all the churches he may belong to, all the services he may attend, all the

---

<sup>65</sup> Mennonite General Conference, Aug. 23, 1951.

<sup>66</sup> Faith and Practice, p. 44.

sermons he may practice, all the debts he may pay, all the ordinances he may observe, all the laws he may keep, all the benevolent acts he may perform will not make his soul one whit safer; and all the sins he may commit from idolatry to murder will not make his soul in any more danger...the way I live has nothing whatsoever to do with the salvation of my soul.”<sup>67</sup>

2. Reasons why “once saved always saved” is false.
  - a. Adam and Eve fell from the grace of God. Genesis 3.
  - b. Some angels fell from the grace of God. Jude 6 And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. 2 Peter 2:4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast *them* down to hell, and delivered *them* into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment.
  - c. The devil fell from the grace of God.
  - d. The son of perdition fell from the grace of God. John 17:12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. Matthew 26:24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born.
  - e. Those who forsake God and righteous living, their righteousness will not be remembered. Ezekiel 18:24,25 But when the righteous turneth away from his righteousness, and committeth iniquity, *and* doeth according to all the abominations that the wicked *man* doeth, shall he live? All his righteousness that he hath done shall not be mentioned: in his trespass that he hath trespassed, and in his sin that he hath sinned, in them shall he die.<sup>25</sup> Yet ye say, The way of the Lord is not equal. Hear now, O house of Israel; Is not my way equal? are not your ways unequal?
  - f. Some at Galatia were in danger of falling from the grace of God. Gal. 1:6-9; 5:4.

---

<sup>67</sup> Sam Morris, From a tract: Do a Christians Sins Damn His Soul? (First Baptist Church Stamford, Texas).

- g. The five foolish virgins in the kingdom were lost. Matt. 25:1-13.
- h. The one talent man in the kingdom was lost for not developing his talent. Matt. 25:14-30.
- i. The good will be separated from the bad in the kingdom and the bad will be lost. Matthew 13:47-50 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: <sup>48</sup>Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. <sup>49</sup>So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, <sup>50</sup>And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.
- j. Those who add to or take from God's word will have their part taken out of the Lamb's book of life. Revelation 22:18, 19 For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: <sup>19</sup>And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and *from* the things which are written in this book.
- k. Those who practice the works of the flesh will be lost. Galatians 5:19-21 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are *these*; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, <sup>20</sup>Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, <sup>21</sup>Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revelings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told *you* in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.
- l. All liars will be lost. Revelation 21:8 But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whore-mongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brim-stone: which is the second death.
- m. Better for one not to know the way of righteousness than to have known it and turn from it. 2 Peter 2:20-22 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the

knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. <sup>21</sup>For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known *it*, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. <sup>22</sup>But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog *is* turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

- n. The Jews of the first century were the children of God, but if they did not obey Christ they would have been lost. John 8:24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins.
- o. The rich man was subject to the law of Moses, thus a child of God, but he was lost. Luke 16:29 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. Deuteronomy 5:1,2 And Moses called all Israel, and said unto them, Hear, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your ears this day, that ye may learn them, and keep, and do them. <sup>2</sup>The LORD our God made a covenant with us in Horeb.
- p. Judas Iscariot fell from the grace of God. Acts 1:25 That he may take part of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.
- q. Demas left God to love the world. 2 Timothy 4:10 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.
- r. The chief rulers of John 12:42 were children of God, but were lost because they would not confess Christ. Matthew 10:32, 33. John 12:42 Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue. Matthew 10:32,33 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. <sup>33</sup>But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

- s. One can err from the faith and need to repent to keep from dying spiritually. James 5:19,20 Brethren, if any of you do err from the truth, and one convert him; <sup>20</sup>Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.
- t. Sam Morris, a Baptist preacher, said that the way a man lives has nothing whatsoever to do with the salvation of his soul. (See quote above in point #1.)
- u. Eternal life comes at the end of this age. Mark 10:30 But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life. 1 John 2:25 And this is the promise that he hath promised us, *even* eternal life. Romans 6:22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. Matthew 25:46 And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.
- v. Ananias and Sapphira fell from the grace of God. Acts 5:1-4.
- w. A child of God who provides not for his own has denied the faith and is worse than an infidel. 1 Timothy 5:8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.
- x. If one cannot fall, then why the warnings in the Bible that one can fall? 1 Corinthians 10:12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall. 1 Corinthians 9:27 But I keep under my body, and bring *it* into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway. Hebrews 3:12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.
- y. Paul said some would fall away from the faith. 1 Timothy 4:1 Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.
- z. If one forsakes God, then God will forsake him. 1 Chronicles 28:9 And thou, Solomon my son, know thou the God of thy father, and serve him with a perfect heart and with a willing

mind: for the LORD searcheth all hearts, and understandeth all the imaginations of the thoughts: if thou seek him, he will be found of thee; but if thou forsake him, he will cast thee off for ever.

- aa. A man will reap what he sows. Galatians 6:7-9 Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. <sup>8</sup>For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. <sup>9</sup>And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.
- bb. The parable of the sower proves that a child of God can so sin as to be lost. Luke 8:11-15.
- cc. Some who were enlightened and tasted of the heavenly gift can be lost. Hebrews 6:4-6 For *it is* impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, <sup>5</sup>And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, <sup>6</sup>If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put *him* to an open shame.
- dd. The prodigal teaches one can leave the Father and become lost. Luke 15:11-32.
- ee. One who says he knows the Lord and does not keep his commandments is a liar. 1 John 2:3,4 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. <sup>4</sup>He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.
- ff. Jesus sent His disciples out to preach to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. Matthew 10:5,6 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritans enter ye not: <sup>6</sup>But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.
- gg. Jesus taught a parable to show that sheep can go astray. Luke 15:3-7 And he spake this parable unto them, saying, <sup>4</sup>What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? <sup>5</sup>And when he

hath found *it*, he layeth *it* on his shoulders, rejoicing. <sup>6</sup>And when he cometh home, he calleth together *his* friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost. <sup>7</sup>I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

- hh. The Baptist know that it is wrong for a child of God to live in sin, but they do not know how to deal with it.
  - 1) Some say, "He never was saved to start with."
  - 2) Some say, "God will strike him dead."
  - 3) Some say, "God will not let him die in sin."
  - 4) Some say, "God will chastise him into line."
  - 5) Some say, " It is the flesh and not the spirit that sins."
  - 6) Some misuse 1 John 3:9 and say a child of God cannot sin.
  - 7) Some say, "It makes no difference how a child of God lives."
  - 8) Some say, "That a child of God would not want to sin."
- ii. Christians who are lukewarm will be spewed from God's mouth. Revelation 3:16 So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of my mouth.
- jj. The Christian graces are designed to keep one from falling. 2 Pet. 1:1-13.
- kk. The church at Ephesus was saved by grace through faith, but sometime later they found themselves in a situation where they had to repent or perish. Rev. 3:1-7.
- ll. The demons prove that one can fall from the grace of God. James 2:19 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.

mm. King Saul proves one can fall from God's grace. 1 Sam. 28.

nn. Some of God's children are cursed. 2 Peter 2:14 Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children.

3. Some of the "if" passages:

a. John 8:31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, *then* are ye my disciples indeed.

b. John 8:51 Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

c. John 12:26 If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will *my* Father honour.

d. John 15:10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

e. 1 Corinthians 15:2 By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain.

f. Galatians 6:9 And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

g. Colossians 1:23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and *be* not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, *and* which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister.

h. Hebrews 3:6 But Christ as a son over his own house; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.

i. 1 John 1:7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

j. 2 Peter 1:10 Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall.

4. The John 10:27,28 argument.

a. Sheep hear and follow (the question is how long).

b. Jesus knows them (1 John 2:3,4).

c. Jesus gives them eternal life (Mark 10:30; Titus 1:2; Rom. 6: 22; John 5:24; 1 John 2:25).

d. They shall never perish (this is after Christ gives to them eternal life at the end after they have followed the Lord).

e. Sins of the heart committed by the fleshly body.

**Baptist:** “My soul sin? No. Has Brother Bogard ever sinned? In my soul I do not. I am as perfect as God Himself as far as my soul is concerned. Then what about my body? It does sin.”<sup>68</sup>

f. See chart.

Sin	Heart	Body
Adultery	Mark 7:21	Gal. 5:19
Fornication	Mark 7:21	Gal. 5:19
Murders	Mark 7:21	Gal. 5:21
Thefts	Mark 7:21	Rev. 9:20,23
Covetousness	Mark 7:22	Col. 3:5
Wickedness	Mark 7:21	Job 27:4
Deceit	Mark 7:22	Job 27:4
Lasciviousness	Mark 7:22	Gal. 5:22 <sup>69</sup>

<sup>68</sup> Ben Bogard, Hardeman-Bogard Debate, pp309,310.

<sup>69</sup> Ben Bogard, Hardeman-Bogard Debate, pp309,310.

## XXI. QUESTIONS TO ASK DENOMINATIONAL PEOPLE DURING BIBLE STUDIES.

### A. Catholics.

- \_\_1. When did Peter become Pope?
- \_\_2. Was Paul subject to Pope Peter?
- \_\_3. Can one be married and be a Pope?
- \_\_4. What was Pope Peter's first ex-cathedra statement?
- \_\_5. Is the Pope infallible when he is not speaking ex-cathedra?
- \_\_6. Can fallible men interpret the Bible for themselves and be right in the sight of God?
- \_\_7. If one faithfully follows the Bible only, can he go to heaven?
- \_\_8. Are all statements from the Pope infallible?
- \_\_9. Are all statements from the Catholic church infallible?
- \_\_10. Are the bishops and priests infallible?
  
- \_\_11. Are the members of the Catholic church infallible?
- \_\_12. Name one thing that I must believe to be saved that is not found in the Bible.
- \_\_13. Can the Pope ever be told that he is wrong?
- \_\_14. Can one become a Christian and go to heaven without being a Catholic?
- \_\_15. Can the Bible produce a Christian without the aid of the Catholic church?
- \_\_16. Is the plan of salvation found anywhere in the Bible? If so, where?
- \_\_17. How does faith come?
- \_\_18. Is the Bible the word of God's grace?
- \_\_19. Do we have in the Bible all things that pertain unto life and godliness?
- \_\_20. Do you believe in modern day revelation?
- \_\_21. Are there Christians outside the Catholic church?

- \_\_22. Are all responsible people who are not Catholics lost?
- \_\_23. Do all Catholics follow the Pope?
- \_\_24. Are all Catholics who do not follow the Pope lost?
- \_\_25. Are all Catholics who do not follow the oral traditions of the Catholic church lost?
- \_\_26. Name one oral tradition that I must believe or be lost.
- \_\_27. Can one come to the knowledge of God without the teachings and traditions of the Pope?
- \_\_28. Can one come to believe in Christ without the teachings of tradition and the sayings of the Pope?
- \_\_29. Give the verse that teaches that we are to have a Pope.
- \_\_30. Give the verse that teaches papal succession.
- \_\_31. Give the verse that teaches papal infallibility.
- \_\_32. Name one ex-cathedra statement that has been made since the Bible was written that I must obey or be lost.
- \_\_33. Is a church infallible because it declares itself to be infallible?

B. Baptist.

- \_\_ 1. All Baptists who do not believe in “once saved always saved” will be lost.
- \_\_ 2. All members of the church of Christ who do not believe in “once saved always saved” will be lost.
- \_\_ 3. The apostle Paul was a Baptist.
- \_\_ 4. The apostle Paul was a member of the church you read about in the Bible.
- \_\_ 5. The Bible teaches that one is saved by faith alone.
- \_\_ 6. All who are not Baptist will be lost
- \_\_ 7. One must give up homosexuality to be a Baptist.
- \_\_ 8. A Baptist can be member of the Masonic lodge and be saved.
- \_\_ 9. A Baptist preacher who runs off with his secretary is still saved.

- \_\_10. David was still saved while he was committing adultery with Bathsheba.
- \_\_11. Jews (children of God) who refused to believe in the Christ in the first century were saved anyway.
- \_\_12. The Bible teaches that sheep can be lost.
- \_\_13. Judas Iscariot was saved at one time.
- \_\_14. Judas Iscariot worked miracles by the power of the Holy Spirit.
- \_\_15. Judas Iscariot was lost.
- \_\_16. All Jews will be saved.
- \_\_17. The Baptist church is mentioned in the Bible.
- \_\_18. All Baptists who do not believe in the use of instrumental music in worship to God are lost.
- \_\_19. One can say that he knows God if he keep His commandments.
- \_\_20. One must obey God to be saved.
- \_\_21. Baptism is a commandment of God.
- \_\_22. One must obey the commandments of God to be saved.
- \_\_23. Baptism for the remission of sins is a Bible doctrine.
- \_\_24. Baptism into the Baptist church is a Bible doctrine.
- \_\_25. One must be born of both the water and the spirit in order to be born again.
- \_\_26. All responsible people must be a member of the Lord's church or be lost.
- \_\_27. All Baptists who do not believe in premillennialism are lost.
- \_\_28. All members of the church of Christ who do not believe in premillennialism are lost.
- \_\_29. God is in fellowship with the Baptists who do not believe in "once saved always saved."
- \_\_30. I am in fellowship with Baptists who do not believe in "once saved always saved."
- \_\_31. The church of Christ is a cult.

- \_\_32. Baptists who do not believe in “once saved always saved” are a cult.
- \_\_33. The church of Christ teaches baptismal regeneration.
- \_\_34. The church of Christ teaches that Alexander Campbell was their founder.
- \_\_35. The church of Christ teaches that the title “church of Christ” is the only descriptive term for the Lord’s church.
- \_\_36. The church of Christ teaches one can work his way to heaven.
- \_\_37. All Methodists are lost.
- \_\_38. I fellowship the Methodists.
- \_\_39. Instrumental music is authorized in the New Testament.
- \_\_40. Closed communion is taught in the New Testament.
- \_\_41. The only baptism that is valid is Baptist baptism.
- \_\_42. Partaking of the Lord’s Supper on the first day of the week is authorized by the New Testament.
- \_\_43. Partaking of the Lord’s Supper quarterly is authorized by the New Testament.
- \_\_44. Baptists who once believed “once saved always saved,” but gave that view up are still saved.
- \_\_45. Baptists who once believe “once saved always saved,” but repented of that and became a member of the Lord’s church are still saved.
- \_\_46. Alexander Campbell is saved. (You said he was an apostate Baptist).
- \_\_47. All who follow the apostate Baptist, Alexander Campbell, will be saved.
- \_\_48. All members of the church of Christ are lost.
- \_\_49. One can be in a cult and be saved.
- \_\_50. One can say that he knows God even if he does not keep God’s commandments.

- \_\_51. One can disobey God and be saved.
- \_\_52. One must be baptized to be saved.
- \_\_53. One must be baptized to be a Baptist.
- \_\_54. It is harder to be a Baptist than it is to go to heaven.
- \_\_55. The Bible teaches that we are to withdraw fellowship from any brother who walks disorderly.
- \_\_56. The Old Testament is binding on men today.
- \_\_57. One who goes back and tries to keep the Old Law falls from grace.
- \_\_58. We are under New Testament law.
- \_\_59. We are under no law.
- \_\_60. Division is sinful.
- \_\_61. Denominationalism is scriptural.
- \_\_62. The Bible teaches there is one body.
- \_\_63. The Bible teaches that there is one baptism.
- \_\_64. The Lord's church is on earth today separate and apart from denominationalism.
- \_\_65. We must do only that which is authorized by the inspired word of God.
- \_\_66. The Baptist church is authorized by the word of God.
- \_\_67. I will give up any thing which I believe which is not authorized by the word of God.
- \_\_68. The Bible teaches that one should be a Baptist-Christian.
- \_\_69. The Bible teaches that one should be a Methodist-Christian.
- \_\_70. One must stand against all false doctrine.
- \_\_71. Baptists who teach that one can fall from grace teach false doctrine.
- \_\_72. False doctrine occurs when one adds to or takes from the word of God.
- \_\_73. It does not matter what we believe.
- \_\_74. We will be judged by the way we live.

- \_\_75. I, as a born-again Christian, can commit adultery with one hundred women and never repent of such and then die and go to heaven.
- \_\_76. Sin is a violation of God's law.
- \_\_77. Christ established two churches.
- \_\_78. One is obligated to fellowship those who are in fellowship with God.
- \_\_79. A child of God can practice the works of the flesh (Gal. 5:19-21) and still go to heaven.
- \_\_80. The Lord wants me to be a Baptist-Christian.
- \_\_81. Paul tried to convince king Agrippa to be a Baptist.
- \_\_82. All men who are accountable for their actions are under a God-given obligation to be a Baptist or be lost.
- \_\_83. All men who are accountable for their actions are under a God-given obligation to be a member of the Lord's church or be lost.
- \_\_84. All spiritual blessings are in Christ.
- \_\_85. One gets into Christ prior to water baptism.
- \_\_86. I have been baptized with the Holy Spirit.
- \_\_87. All who are not baptized with the Holy Spirit are lost.
- \_\_88. I know that I am saved.
- \_\_89. All Baptists who teach there is no hell are lost.
- \_\_90. All Baptists who say that the Bible is not the inspired word of God are lost.
- \_\_91. All Baptists who were once saved but have gone into atheism are lost.
- \_\_92. All homosexuals must give up homosexuality to become a child of God.
- \_\_93. One must have faith to be saved.
- \_\_94. One must repent to be saved.
- \_\_95. One must confess Christ with his mouth to be saved.
- \_\_96. Faith is a work.
- \_\_97. Repentance is a work.

- 98. Confession is a work.
- 99. We can work our way to heaven.
- 100. A child of God can live in sin and still be saved.

C. Mormons.

- 1. There are saved people in all churches.
- 2. There are only three members of the Godhead.
- 3. One must believe that Joseph Smith is a prophet to be saved.
- 4. The Bible alone is a sufficient guide for our salvation.
- 5. All who reject the book of Mormon will be lost.
- 6. All who reject the Bible will be lost.
- 7. Joseph Smith will help judge us judgment day.
- 8. I can believe for another man.
- 9. I can repent for another man.
- 10. I can be baptized for another man.
- 11. If a prophet makes a false prophesy, then he is a false prophet.
- 12. The apostle Paul taught the whole counsel of God without the book of Mormon.
- 13. Jesus was born in Bethlehem.
- 14. The Bible says that Jesus would be born in Bethlehem.
- 15. The book of Mormon says that Jesus was born in Bethlehem.
- 16. If two books contradict, then both cannot be inspired.
- 17. Adam is the God of this universe.
- 18. God has flesh and bones like mankind.
- 19. We will be gods one day.
- 20. My wife will be resurrected only if I call her forth.
- 21. I will be married in the next life and have many wives and have many children (offspring).
- 22. Jesus and the devil are brothers.

- \_\_23. Many will be given a second chance to accept Joseph Smith and his writings.
- \_\_24. One can have many wives today.
- \_\_25. Joseph Smith had many wives.
- \_\_26. Brigham Young had many wives.
- \_\_27. All people who have had many wives in the Christian age will be lost if they did not repent.
- \_\_28. Mormons today who have many wives are lost and will go to hell.
- \_\_29. One is a true Mormon if, and only if, he teaches polygamy.
- \_\_30. One must be baptized to be saved.
- \_\_31. The blood of Jesus is sufficient to cover all our sins.

D. Seventh-Day Adventist.

- \_\_ 1. One must be a member of the Seventh-Day Adventist church to be saved.
- \_\_ 2. A faithful member of the church of Christ will be saved.
- \_\_ 3. One must be a member of the church of the Bible to be saved.
- \_\_ 4. Anyone who teaches baptism for the remission of sins teaches a false doctrine.
- \_\_ 5. One must obey the commandments of God in order to be saved.
- \_\_ 6. "Remember the sabbath" is a commandment binding on all people today.
- \_\_ 7. Anyone who worships upon the first day of the week (Sunday) sins in so doing.
- \_\_ 8. One who continues in sin cannot be saved.
- \_\_ 9. The apostle Paul was a member of the Seventh-Day Adventist church.
- \_\_10. The apostle Paul was a member of the church of the New Testament.

- \_\_11. The use of instrumental music in worship is authorized in the Ten Commandments.
- \_\_12. The use of instrumental music in worship is authorized in the New Testament.
- \_\_13. We must do only that for which we have authority.
- \_\_14. One must be in Christ in order to be saved.
- \_\_15. Division is sinful.
- \_\_16. The Seventh-Day Adventist church is a denomination.
- \_\_17. One gets into Christ prior to baptism.
- \_\_18. People can believe conflicting doctrines and all be right.
- \_\_19. It makes no difference what one believes.
- \_\_20. The Lord's Supper is to be observed on the sabbath.
- \_\_21. The Lord's Supper is to be observed on the first day of the week.
- \_\_22. Giving is to be done on the sabbath.
- \_\_23. Giving is to be done on the first day of the week.
- \_\_24. It does not matter when or how one worships.
- \_\_25. We should give up all man-made doctrines and churches.
- \_\_26. A man-made doctrine is just as good as the Lord's doctrine.
- \_\_27. A man-made church is just as good as the Lord's church.
- \_\_28. I will give up anything I believe or practice which is not in the Bible.
- \_\_29. The law of Moses was given to the Gentiles.
- \_\_30. The law of Moses is no longer binding on anyone.
- \_\_31. The New Testament clearly teaches us how to observe the sabbath.
- \_\_32. All nations are to observe the sabbath or be lost.
- \_\_33. One commandment is more important than others.
- \_\_34. Baptism is a commandment.
- \_\_35. One can violate the commandments of God and still go to heaven.
- \_\_36. The law of Moses and the law of God were the same.
- \_\_37. It is a sin to eat meat.

- \_\_38. Ellen G. White was a prophetess.
- \_\_39. One must believe the writings of Ellen G. White or be lost.

E. Holiness.

- \_\_ 1. One must speak in tongues to know that he is saved.
- \_\_ 2. All Baptists are lost.
- \_\_ 3. When one received the Holy Spirit in the New Testament he always spoke in tongues.
- \_\_ 4. One cannot be saved without the baptism of the Holy Spirit.
- \_\_ 5. All people who claim to have receive the miraculous operation of the Holy Spirit are born again.
- \_\_ 6. The non-Christian can understand the Bible.
- \_\_ 7. One must be miraculously called to be a Christian.
- \_\_ 8. A faithful member of the church of Christ will be saved.
- \_\_ 9. The eunuch was called miraculously.
- \_\_10. One who is baptized with the Holy Spirit will speak in tongues.
- \_\_11. I have been baptized in water.
- \_\_12. The Bible teaches there is one baptism.
- \_\_13. The Mormons are right religiously.
- \_\_14. The Jehovah's Witnesses are right religiously.
- \_\_15. We must fellowship all who claim to be baptized with the Holy Spirit.
- \_\_16. One is saved by grace through faith.
- \_\_17. One can work miracles and still be lost if he becomes unfaithful.
- \_\_18. All gifts of the Holy Spirit are available today.
- \_\_19. I agree with what the Holy Spirit said in Acts 2:38.
- \_\_20. I agree with what the Holy Spirit said in Eph. 5:19.
- \_\_21. I agree with what the Holy Spirit said in Acts 20:7.
- \_\_22. I agree with what the Holy Spirit said in 2 Tim. 2:11,12.
- \_\_23. I agree with what the Holy Spirit said in Acts 11:14.

- 24. I agree with what the Holy Spirit said in 1 Cor. 14:37.
- 25. I agree with what the Holy Spirit said in 1 Cor. 1:10.
- 26. I agree with what the Holy Spirit said in 1 Cor. 13:8.
- 27. Holy Spirit baptism is a command.
- 28. Water baptism is a command.
- 29. All Holy Spirit filled people can drink poison and not die.
- 30. I can drink poison and not die.
- 31. Mark 16:17,18 is for all believers today.
- 32. We can lay our hands on the sick and they shall recover.
- 33. It is scriptural to speak in tongues without an interpreter.
- 34. It is scriptural for women to preach.
- 35. One must be a member of a Holiness church to be saved.

F. Jehovah's Witnesses.

- 1. Paul was a Jehovah's Witness.
- 2. All people must be part of the Jehovah's Witnesses or be lost.
- 3. I can be a member of the church of Christ and be saved.
- 4. One is saved in the name of Christ.
- 5. Jesus was created by God.
- 6. The body of Jesus was raised from the dead.
- 7. Man has a soul.
- 8. The story of the rich man and Lazarus is a parable.
- 9. One is saved at the point of faith only.
- 10. Charles Taze Russell was an inspired man like the apostle Paul.
- 11. Hell is a place of torment.
- 12. Jehovah is God's only name.
- 13. The earth will be destroyed.
- 14. All men have a chance to go to heaven.
- 15. All children of God have a right to partake of the Lord's Supper.
- 16. The writings of Judge Rutherford are inspired.

- 17. All men will be raised from the dead.
- 18. Some people in the New Testament obeyed God immediately.
- 19. All Baptists are lost.
- 20. I can read about the Jehovah's Witnesses in the Bible.

## SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT BAPTIST CHURCHES

By Clarence Lavender

For a number of years, members of the Lord's church have studied, discussed and debated the people associated with Baptist churches. It is difficult in a short article to point out all the things believed by Baptist churches, after all, there are about thirty different kinds of Baptists. Frank Mead in his book, Handbook of Denominations in the United States, lists twenty eight different Baptist churches. Please study carefully the following points. Some are good, most are error.

1. The Baptists are not a cult.
2. H. C. Vedder says that Roger Williams founded the Primitive Baptist church in 1639.
3. They teach a person is born dead in sin and can do nothing to rescue himself.
4. They teach that all Christians will be preserved and will persevere in grace unto heavenly glory, and not one of them will be finally lost, or to put it another way: once saved, always saved.
5. Foot washing is a church ordinance, practiced usually once a year; the only time also when the Lord's Supper is taken. This is a practice of the Primitive Baptists (PB).
6. They (PB) do not use instruments of music in their services. (On this we certainly agree.)
7. Baptists began to form themselves into small associations in 1650.
8. In 1926, a new denomination came out of the Southern Baptist Convention calling itself the American Baptist Association.
9. I. Frank Norris (the preacher brother Foy E. Wallace debated) helped develop small branches of Missionary Baptists who were call Fundamentalists.
10. In 1894 J. N. Hall affirmed in debate the Baptist church was started by John the Baptist (Baptizer) at the Jordan River.
11. They teach that salvation comes by faith alone.
12. Baptists teach baptism is by immersion, but that it is not essential to one's salvation.
13. They say there is nothing in a name; one is as good as another.
14. Missionary Baptists, like the Primitive Baptists, teach that it is utterly impossible for a Christian to be lost.
15. They believe in the premillennial reign of Christ, and that they will be the bride of Christ at his return, all others are excluded.
16. D. N. Jackson affirmed that the Baptists are the ONLY people who believe in and teach a complete system of salvation.
17. Baptist churches are operated by a board of deacons and the preacher.
18. They do not have elders in the organization, in the New Testament sense of the word.

19. Benjamin Randall (1749-1808) organized the first Free-Will Baptist church at New Durham, New Hampshire in 1780.
20. Instead of being Calvinistic, like Primitive and Missionary Baptists, these (Free-Will Baptists) are what is called Arminians , that is, they believe a person must do something to be saved, at least must believe, also that they can fall back into sin and be lost.
21. "Free-Willers" also believe in foot washing.
22. They believe that a lost person must repent first, then believe.
23. "Free-Willers" believe all who are immersed by a proper administrator and accepts their church covenant are members.
24. The American Baptists split off from the Southern Baptists in 1844-1845 over slavery.
25. The General Baptists claim their name and origin in John Snythe and Thomas Helwys.
26. Landmark Baptists believe in "apostolic succession."
27. Other names for Primitive Baptists are: "Old School," "Regular," "Antimission" and "Hard Shell."
28. Most Baptists believe the Bible is inspired.
29. Most believe in the Trinity and the Virgin Birth.
30. There is a group called the Seventh Day (Sabbatarians) Baptists.
31. Many Baptists partake of the Lord's Supper only once a month.
32. They teach to confess that they believe that God, for Jesus Christ's sake, has forgiven them of their sins, even before they are baptized.
33. A saved person cannot fall from grace.
34. They practice "closed communion."
35. They vote people in and out of the church.
36. They teach that people are baptized with the Holy Spirit.
37. They teach that people should pray for the Holy Spirit to come upon them.
38. Most Baptists use mechanical instruments of music in worship.
39. Many have conventions who legislate to the local church.
40. They teach their name comes from the Bible, but nowhere does the Bible say "Baptist church." (John was a Baptizer!)
41. They deny the Bible commands that the Lord's Supper be taken every Sunday.
42. They take great delight in calling members of the Church of Christ "Campbel-lites."
43. Many Baptists believe in the Rapture and the Great Tribulation, others do not.
44. Some Baptists do not know about it, but there is a Standard Manual for Baptist Churches written by Edward T. Hiscox.
45. Many believe that Salvation is wholly of grace.
46. They believe since the fall of Adam that all men are born of sin.
47. Baptists believe in attributed righteousness.
48. They believe repentance and faith (in that order) are wrought in the soul by the regenerating Spirit of God.
49. They believe that election is the eternal purpose of God, according to which he graciously regenerates, sanctifies and saves sinners.

50. They call their bishops, pastors or preachers.
51. Most Baptists support and honor civil government as the Bible teaches.
52. They believe in an eternal heaven and hell.
53. Armitage in his book, History of the Baptists , says, “John left no church.”
54. There is a group of Baptists who call themselves “The six principle Baptists,” so called because their doctrinal confession is based on the points mentioned in Hebrews 6:1,2.
55. Baptists withdraw fellowship from any member who unites with another religious group.

Many Baptists assume that the church was established by John the Baptist. But the fact that it was established by Christ is irrefutable proof that it was not established by John or any other human being. John was dead at the time Jesus promised to build the church. In Matthew 14:10 John was put to death. Two chapters later, in Matthew 16:18, Jesus promised to build his church. He said, “I will build my church.” “I will” is future tense; John was dead and the establishment of the church was in the future. Christ was to build from the foundation and not on something John had already started (Matthew 16:18).

John the Baptist was a great man and did a scriptural work - namely, he was the forerunner who went before Lord to prepare the people to receive him (Mal. 3:1; Isa. 40:3; Lk. 1:17). John was a great worker for the Lord, but he did not establish the church of the Bible, or any other church known to man.

Members of the Baptist church are basically good people, let us love them and teach them what the Bible says pertaining to all spiritual things.

## **SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT THE METHODIST CHURCHES**

By Clarence Lavender

The work of the Methodist church is “big business.” It holds property in the United States valued at almost four billion dollars. It owns everything from hospitals to secondary schools. There is wide freedom in interpretation and practice of all doctrine; liberals and conservatives work in close harmony. The Methodist church is indeed the “social club religion” of our day. There are at least 23 separate Methodist churches in America.

Here are a few things about the Methodist church you should know:

1. The founder of the Methodist church was John Wesley in 1729.
2. The place of its origin was Oxford University in England.
3. In 1735 John Wesley came to America seeking other converts. He died in 1791.

4. Prominent in helping John Wesley in Methodism was his brother, Charles Wesley, and his friend George Whitefield.
5. They were called Methodists because they were methodically religious. Their method of living was found in William Law's A Serious Call to a Devout and Holy Life and A Treatise on Christian Perfection.
6. In 1739 Wesley drew up a Deed of Declaration to give legal status to the yearly Methodist conference.
7. The first Methodist Society in America was in New York in 1766.
8. The Methodist movement in America split in 1844 over slavery.
9. In 1739 the Methodists adopted a new constitution in three (3) sections: The Articles of Religion, drawn up by John Wesley and based on the 39 articles of Religion of the Church of England; the General Rule, covering the conduct of church members and the duties of church officials; and the Articles of Organization and Government, outlining the organization and conduct of conferences.
10. Official boards are made up of stewards and trustees and other church officers.
11. Trustees manage the property interests of the Methodist church; stewards handle finances and generally guide the spiritual work.
12. Quarterly, annual and general conferences prevail in most Methodist churches. Their policies are dictated to the local bodies as law.
13. They have what is called the Methodist Discipline, which gives rules and regulations, as well as their articles of faith, these are all man made.
14. The ninth article in their discipline teaches that "the doctrine of justification by faith only is a most wholesome doctrine and is very full of comfort."
15. Methodism teaches they are only one of the many branches of the church.
16. They teach that there is nothing in a name.
17. They make no difference between the Old and New Testaments. One is to be obeyed as much as the other.
18. They teach that the officers of the Church are presiding elders, circuit riders, class leaders, stewards.
19. They teach that no one should be admitted into full membership of the church until he has been at least six months on probation.
20. They teach that man has no free will to do good without the grace of God by Christ preventing him.
21. They teach salvation is offered in both the Old and New testament.
22. They teach that Baptism is not essential to salvation.
23. They teach that although Baptism is not essential to salvation, they base the salvation of infants on baptism: such is water regeneration, pure and simple!
24. They teach that it is scriptural to Baptize UNBELIEVERS.
25. They teach that baptism takes the place of circumcision.
26. They teach that there are three ways of baptism, sprinkling, pouring and immersion.
27. They believe the Holy Spirit works directly on sinners to save them.
28. That those who have been baptized in water may also be baptized in the Holy Spirit.
29. That the Lord's Supper is a sacrament (oath).

30. That it is not necessary to observe the Lord's Supper each week.
31. That the church should vote upon the reception or expulsion of members.
32. They adhere to what is referred to as The Apostles' Creed.
33. It is permissible to use the mourner's bench.
34. They use instrumental music in worship.
35. They teach that Christ was in the world to reconcile His Father to us. (The Bible teaches just the opposite.)
36. That a death-bed repentance will save a man.
37. Work done by R. Laird Harris reveals that many Methodist preachers do not believe in the inspiration of the Bible.
38. Many Methodist preachers do not believe in eternal hell as taught in the Bible.
39. The Methodist church is NOT a cult. They believe in the Trinity, The Resurrection of Christ, that is, many do.
40. They believe in original as well as actual sin.

This writer has found many members of the Methodist Church to be kind and warm hearted towards their fellow man. We hold no hard feelings toward Methodist or people from any other denomination. We do oppose much of what they teach because it is not taught in the Bible. The Bible must always be our guide in religious matters (2 Timothy 3:16; 2 John 9-11; Jude 3). We are discussing these issues because we believe that honest investigation is the only way to arrive at truth (John 8:32; 17:17).

## **SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT PENTECOSTAL CHURCHES**

By Clarence Lavender

In a book written by Frank Mead entitled, Handbook of Denominations in the United States, there is listed eleven (11) different Pentecostal churches. Their names are listed with the time of their beginning following. (1) Calvary Pentecostal, Inc. (1931), (2) Elim Missionary Assemblies (1947), (3) Emmanuel Holiness Church (1953), (4) International Pentecostal Assemblies (1921), (5) Pentecostal Assemblies of the World, Inc. (1914), (6) Pentecostal Church of Christ (1917), (7) Pentecostal Church of God of America, Inc., (8) Pentecostal Fire-Baptized Holiness Church (1911), (9) Pentecostal Free-Will Baptist Church, Inc. (1959), (10) Pentecostal Holiness Church (1898), (11) United Pentecostal Church, Inc. (1945).

There are some differences in these groups, but basically they believe the same doctrines. Please consider the following. Some things they hold to are true, many are false.

1. They believe in Holy Spirit baptism.
2. They believe the Holy Spirit enables them to heal incurable diseases.
3. Some believe that Jesus is the ONLY person in the Godhead.

4. They have women preachers.
5. They claim to speak in tongues.
6. That baptism is in the name of Jesus only, which is the family name, and not to be baptized in the name of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit (Matthew 28:18-20).
7. They use all kinds of instruments of music in worship.
8. All Pentecostal churches were organized by men, and have no biblical authority to exist.
9. They claim latter day revelations came in 1900 and 1914.
10. They believe in the virgin birth of Christ.
11. They believe in the inspiration of the Bible.
12. Some of them do not believe in women wearing make-up.
13. They believe in the false doctrine of original sin.
14. They believe in “manifestations” and “blessings” of the working of the Holy Spirit that often runs into excessive emotionalism, shouting, trances, jerking, hand clapping and “tongue talking.”
15. They believe the false doctrine of premillennialism.
16. They believe in Heaven and Hell.
17. They baptize by immersion, but not for the remission of sins.
18. Some believe in foot washing. This is frequently observed in connection with the Lord’s Supper.
19. Tongue speaking is widespread among the Pentecostals.
20. They believe in anointing the sick with oil.
21. They believe strongly in tithing.
22. Organization to some groups is like that of the Methodists.
23. Five things are typical of Pentecostal groups: baptism by immersion (not for remission of sins), Holy Spirit baptism, speaking in tongues, divine healing and foot washing.
24. The Pentecostal Fire-Baptized Holiness Church forbids “filthiness of speech, foolish talking or jesting, slang, attendance at fairs, swimming pools, or shows of any kind, the use of jewelry, gold, feathers, flowers, costly apparel, neckties.”
25. Some believe in sanctification as a second work of grace, subsequent to regeneration.
26. Most Pentecostal groups have officers which include a general superintendent, general secretary, and general treasurer. Elections are held about every three years.
27. Some believe that provision was made in the atonement of Christ for the healing of the body.
28. Among Pentecostal Holiness Churches there are 32 annual conferences in the United States, 3 in Canada, 1 in England and 1 in South Africa.
29. “Altar calls” are common among Pentecostals.

## **SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT MORMONISM**

By Clarence Lavender

Mormonism is a cult. A cult is different from a denominational body in that it practices: (1) mind control, (2) it holds to progressive revelation, (3) it denies the deity of Jesus Christ, (4) it “plays” the Bible down and its special revelation up, (5) it has an earthly leader, and (6) it has a system of meritorious works.

Here are some things briefly stated you should know about Mormonism when two young boys, who call themselves “elders” knock on your door:

1. When you are married in the temple in Utah, at death you and your wife become gods and go off to another planet and start your own little world. Women will be eternally pregnant.
2. Jesus and Satan are brothers.
3. Jesus had three wives.
4. At the Judgment all are to stand before Jesus, Joseph Smith and Elohim.
5. Mormons are advised to divorce their mates when they do not convert to Mormonism.
6. Women are called from the grave by their husbands.
7. Joseph Smith, founder of Mormonism, thought at one time that the moon and sun were inhabited.
8. There are over 25,000 polygamist marriages in Utah.
9. They are constantly changing their teachings to suit themselves.
10. Not one city or language mentioned in the Book of Mormon has been found - those in the Bible have been found.
11. At one time Mormons taught that the Black race did not have a soul, in recent years their president received a “revelation” changing their teaching.
12. In the “secret services” of Mormonism, one swears to cut his own throat if he reveals the secrets.
13. They believe in proxy baptism. Mormons have been baptized for millions of dead people. They believe in “Redeeming the Dead.”
14. In some of their services, the “higher ups” wear “Holy Mormon Underwear!”
15. They believe Joseph Smith received revelations from God by looking at stones in a hat.
16. Mormons believe they are in charge of the “gates of Hell.”
17. At one time (it still may be true) the Beneficial Life Insurance Company was owned by the Mormon church.
18. They teach tithing.
19. At one time they owned the chain of Marriott hotels.
20. They believe that Christ was sent to earth from Kolouf, a heavenly world or planet.
21. Joseph Smith had 43 wives.

22. Brigham Young had 25 wives.
23. Mormons are idolaters, for the god they worship is not the God of the Bible.
24. The Mormon god is an exalted man of flesh and bones.
25. Mormons are polytheists, believing in many gods.
26. Mormonism denies the virgin birth of Christ.
27. Joseph Smith claimed the book of Mormon to be inspired, yet more than 5,000 changes have been made from the original edition.
28. Mormons aspire to become God.
29. At the Crucifixion of Christ, the Book of Mormon teaches there was darkness for "three days." The Bible says three hours.
30. The book of Mormon teaches that Christ was born at Jerusalem.
31. In the "Pearl of Great Price" Joseph Smith tells us that John the Baptist appeared to Joseph Smith and his friend Oliver Cowdery, ordained them to the Priesthood of Aaron, and told them to go baptize each other. The Bible teaches none but Levites could hold that office (Numbers 18:1-7; 20-24).
32. Joseph Smith at a later time said the apostles Peter, James and John appeared and ordained him and Cowdery to the Melchizedek Priesthood.
33. The basic teaching of Mormonism is, "When our leaders have spoken, the thinking has been done."
34. Parley Pratt an "apostle" in the Mormon church, taught the Holy Spirit is fluid. The Doctrine of Covenants says that "the Holy Spirit... is a personage of Spirit." Which is right? Inspiration does not conflict with itself!
35. Brigham Young taught Christ had three wives; where Jesus turned the water into wine, was on the occasion of his own marriages.

Brethren, I have given you just a sample of the utter nonsense and false teachings practiced by the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints (Mormons). I have written documentation for the points made in these comments and more if needed. Mormons have precious souls. Let us love them enough to teach them the Bible and expose the false teachings to which they hold.

### **SOME THINGS BRETHREN SHOULD KNOW ABOUT THE EPISCOPAL CHURCH**

By Clarence Lavender

The beginning of the Episcopal church occurred when Henry VIII, the king of England, became infatuated with a beautiful Irish girl by the name of Anne Boleyn. Henry, then Roman Catholic, desired of the Pope to annul his marriage. He, for some time, was married to Catherine of Aragon. When the Pope refused to annul (a word or concept not found in the Bible) his marriage, Henry connived with Parliament and was made head of the English church. It is known in England as the Church of England.

The first permanent colony from England was established at Jamestown, Virginia in 1607. The English cavaliers who made up the colony, came to America for commer-

cial reasons and were all members of the Church of England. The bishop of London appointed the clergymen for the colonies and had the oversight of all religious activities.

The Church of England had thrown off the papal system and replaced it with episcopal form of government. As the colonies broke with England, many who had been Anglicans took the name Episcopalians and established the Episcopalian church. Their doctrine and organization, however, remained that of the Church of England. These colonists established William and Mary College in 1693 to train ministers. The Episcopal church remained the established church in Virginia until the eighteenth century. The Episcopal movement is an organization larger than one congregation governed by bishops, or to put it another way, one bishop (elder) over many congregations.

Some things they believe are listed for your study.

1. The Episcopal church had its beginning with Henry VIII.
2. Thomas Crammer, an associate of Henry's, wrote a book of Homilies and the Forty-Two Articles of Faith believed by the Church of England.
3. The Episcopal church has a common prayer book containing Thirty-nine Articles of Faith.
4. The Basic Faith of the Episcopalian church rests upon the Apostle's and Nicene Creeds, together with the Thirty-nine Articles of the Church of England.
5. The ecclesiastical connection between the Church of England and the Episcopal church was severe (during the War of the Revolution).
6. The name, Episcopal, comes from the Greek word, *episkopos*, a word meaning overseer.
7. Its form of government is Diocesan Episcopacy, that is, one bishop ruling over several churches.
8. Like the Roman Catholic church, the Episcopalians believe their bishops are successors to the Apostles.
9. They have a priesthood, based upon the continuation of Aaronic priesthood.
10. Their authority is found not in the New Testament but in canon law and a prayer book.
11. They teach justification by faith only.
12. They teach Christ died to reconcile His Father to us. The Bible teaches just the opposite. (1 Corinthians 5:18,19; Romans 5:10)
13. They teach the Lord's Supper is to be taken monthly.
14. Their worship is governed not by the New Testament but by ritual.
15. They believe affusion is sufficient for baptism.
16. Episcopalians believe infants are regenerated in baptism, thus, they believe in WATER SALVATION. Nowhere does the Bible teach this doctrine (Mark 16:15,16; Acts 2:38; Hebrews 11:6).
17. They use instrumental music in worship.
18. Some call in to question the inspiration of the Bible.
19. Some question the existence of an eternal hell.

20. They have women priests.
21. Homosexuality is accepted as an "alternate lifestyle."
22. They believe in original sin.
23. They are correct when they reject the doctrine of purgatory, indulgences, the adoration of images and the invocation of saints.
24. They believe in excommunication.
25. They believe "There shall be for every male child to be baptized, when they can be had, two Godfathers and one Godmother; and for every female one Godfather and two Godmothers; and the parents shall be admitted as Sponsors, if desired." (Nowhere is this taught in the Bible.)
26. They condemn the Catholic doctrine of transubstantiation.
27. Episcopal priests, unlike catholic priests, do marry.
28. They teach their liturgy (ministry of priests) must be done in English. This was done in opposition to the Catholic church, who for years did their liturgy in Latin.
29. They believe in the Trinity.
30. They believe in the false doctrine of predestination.

This writer disagrees very strongly with much taught by the Episcopal church. But, I must say in their defense that many of its members are very good and kind people. I was an Episcopalian for about ten years, having been reared in BOYS HOME near Covington, Virginia which is operated by the Episcopal church. I probably owe my life and physical well being to these people. Please understand, I have nothing against the people who make up the Episcopal church, only the doctrine they teach. We must love all men everywhere and encourage them to return to the Bible.

### **SOME THINGS BRETHERN SHOULD KNOW ABOUT THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH**

By Clarence Lavender

The New Testament Church had its beginning in the second chapter of Acts. With the passing of time departure from the PATTERN as found in the New Covenant occurred. By the middle of the second century the church fell under the authority of bishops who considered themselves as successors of the Apostles. As time passed this corrupt organization became known as the "Catholic" or "universal" church. After the conversion of Constantine this religious movement united with the state and became a religio-political organization. In the third century it adopted the Nicene Creed and in 606 AD the first "papa" or Pope. The official name of the Roman Church is, "The Holy Catholic Apostolic and Roman Church." In the pages of history, no organization claiming to be religious has been as corrupt as Roman Catholicism. All a person has to do is study the Dark Ages and the Crusades to see this corruption. Two books of great importance when making a study of Roman Catholicism are written by Brother O. C. Lambert, entitled, Catholicism Against Itself Volumes 1 and 2.

Much of the teaching found in Catholicism has no basis in the Bible. Please consider the following:

1. Roman Catholicism teaches creeds, apocryphal writings, tradition, etc., are to be accepted on par with the Bible.
2. It claims to be the only religious body that has the right to interpret the Scriptures.
3. They claim the Catholic version of the Bible (The Douay, made from the Latin Vulgate. The New Testament published at Rheims in 1582. The Old Testament at Douay, 1609,1610) is the only right version.
4. They teach the Catholic Church is the only true apostolic church.
5. It teaches Peter founded the church at Rome.
- 6.. It teaches the church was founded on Peter.
7. It teaches Peter was the first Pope.
8. It teaches that all Popes are successors to Peter.
9. That the Pope is the representative of Christ on earth.
10. That the Pope is infallible.
11. That priest are to remain unmarried.
12. It teaches that the Pope should be addressed as "Holy Lord God, the Pope."
13. They teach that the priest is the means of access between the sinner and God.
14. They teach that priests should be called "father."
15. They teach that the priest can absolve from sins, even though they are sinners themselves.
16. They teach there is a place called PURGATORY where the dead go to suffer punishment in order to be purified.
17. They teach that Mary is to be an advocate, being God's mother.
18. They teach, "like two sacred rivers flowing front paradise, the Bible and divine tradition contain the word of God,... OF THE TWO, TRADITION IS TO US MORE CLEAR AND SAFE."
19. They teach that there are Seven Sacraments.
20. They believe in the use of mechanical instruments of music in worship.
21. They teach the name to be worn is Catholic.
22. They teach inherited sin.
23. They teach infant baptism.
24. Catholics believe the priests can forgive sins committed after baptism.
25. They teach that at confirmation a person receives the Holy Spirit by laying on of hands of the bishop.
26. They teach the false doctrine of transubstantiation.
27. They teach that the Lord's Supper is a SACRIFICE.
- 28.. Only the priests drink the fruit of the vine.
29. They teach the mass is the same sacrifice as the one on the cross, only "UN-BLOODY."
30. They teach EXTREME UNCTION, this they claim gives health and strength to the soul and sometimes to the body when one is at the point of death.
31. They have "holy orders" by which bishops, priests and officers of the Catholic church are ordained to office.

32. They teach the marriage bond is a sacrament and offers grace.
33. That marriage must be performed by a priest.
34. That the marriage bond is never broken for any cause.
35. They teach that Mary is immaculate, the mother of God, spouse of the Holy Spirit, Propitiary of the world and Gate of Heaven.”
36. They teach that it is NOT unscriptural to worship images.
37. They teach they do not worship the image, but the one the image represents.
38. That one may pray to saints and angels.
39. They teach that Jesus misled the people of his day by teaching what he did in Matthew 19:9.
40. The Catholic translation of the Bible (DOUAY) translates I Corinthians 9:5, “Have we not power to carry about a woman, a sister, as well as the rest of the apostles, and brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?”
41. They count beads as an act of worship.
42. Christmas had its beginning with Catholicism.
43. They had 132 “Charms” adapted in the Dark Ages.

## **SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT PRESBYTERIAN CHURCHES**

By Clarence Lavender

Presbyterianism is deeply indebted to John Calvin, a man who was born in Noyon, France, July 10, 1509 to Roman Catholic parents. He left the Roman Catholic church at the age of twenty-four (24).

The term “Calvinism” is used to designate the system of theology worked out by John Calvin. The word “Presbyterian” has also been used to describe the system of government Calvin adopted to guide the church in Switzerland. The Presbyterian churches are an outgrowth of his movement. Some things you should know about Calvin and Presbyterianism (governed by elders) are as follows:

1. Calvin’s commentary on “Seneca’s Treatise on Mercy” was written in 1532.
2. In 1536 he published his first edition of the Institutes of Christian Religion.
3. In 1541 the town council turned the city of Geneva, Switzerland over to Calvin; he became dictator of the city. It was the state religion.
4. While ruling Geneva, Calvin set up a spy system in order to excommunicate any person who refused to follow his theology.
5. In 1553 Calvin had a man by the name of Servetus arrested, tried and burned at the stake.
6. History says during Calvin’s reign over Geneva, during the period from 1542 to 1546, there were fifty-seven (57) executions and seventy-six (76) banishments from the city of Geneva because of heresy.
7. At the death of Calvin in 1564 Theodore Beza took over the leadership of the Reformation Movement in Geneva.

8. A great contribution made by Calvin was bringing to light many of the errors taught by the Catholic church.
9. Jacob Arminius (1560-1609) professor in the University of Leyden, taught Calvin was wrong on such points of doctrine as the bondage of the human will, irresistible grace, predestination, election and man's freedom of choice.
10. Arminius opposed Calvinism (and rightly so) in that Arminius taught that God would not will to do anything which was contrary to what is right, and thus His will was restricted to justice.
11. Today, if you oppose the doctrine of Calvin you are said to be "Armenian." The name being derived from Jacob Arminius.
12. Presbyterianism was very powerful in Scotland under the leadership of John Knox.
13. Their first discipline book was written in 1560 and adopted in 1592 by Parliament.
14. The Westminster Confession of Faith, the doctrinal foundation of English and American Presbyterianism, was written by the Westminster Association from July 1, 1643 to February 22, 1649.
15. The "Father of American Presbyterianism" was Francis Makemie.
16. Presbyterianism has become a very liberal movement throughout the world.
17. Many no longer believe in the inspiration of the Bible.
18. The Virgin Birth is called into question by some.
19. Homosexuality has been accepted as an "alternate lifestyle."
20. The Presbyterian church now has women preachers.
21. They teach that "God has predestined and foreordained some men and angels out of His free grace and love without any foresight of faith or works in man or perseverance in either of them, and others are foreordained to everlasting death and the number of either is so certain and definite that it cannot be increased or diminished" (Westminster Confession of Faith, Articles 3, 4, 5; Chapter 3; Article 2, Chapter 10.) Study your Bible on this matter, Matthew 28:19,20; Mark 16:15,16; John 3:16; Acts 2:38,39; 2 Thessalonians 2:14; 2 Peter 1:10; 3:9.
22. That "elect infants dying in infancy are regenerated and saved by Christ through the Spirit, so also are all other elect persons who are incapable of being outwardly called by the ministry of the Word" (Westminster Confession of Faith, Article 3, Chapter 10). Again study your Bible, Mark 16:15,16; Romans 10:13-17; Hebrews 11:6. Infants are never lost, nor are others who are incapable of understanding the Bible, all such persons are SAFE!
23. They believe that faith alone saves.
24. They believe that Confession to the apostles' creed is necessary.
25. They believe there are three baptism, sprinkling, pouring and immersion.
26. They believe that the church should practice infant baptism. The vote of Westminster Assembly (July 1, 1643 , February 22, 1649) was twenty-four to retain sprinkling and twenty-five to drop dipping.
27. Presbyterians believe there is no salvation in a name.
28. They believe that baptism is not necessary for salvation.
29. The Lord's Supper does not need to be observed weekly.

30. They teach that the Holy Spirit acts directly upon the heart of a person to persuade them to obey the gospel.
31. They believe in Holy Spirit baptism.
32. They believe the ten commandments are binding men today.
33. They believe that the church should be governed by presbyters. There was a plurality of elders over the local congregation, but never an elder over a plurality of congregations. (Philippians 1:1; Titus 1:5; Acts 14:23).
34. People are elected before the foundation of the world wholly, unconditionally (see Acts 10:34; 2 Peter 3:9; Romans 5:18; 1 Timothy 2:3,4).
35. They believe in "limited atonement." Calvin taught that the atonement of Christ was SUFFICIENT for salvation of ALL, but EFFICIENT ONLY FOR THE ELECT. (See 11 Corinthians 12:9; 11 Corinthians 9:8; Romans 5:6; 11 Corinthians 5:14; 1 John 1:7.)
36. They teach that one cannot fall from grace, that it is impossible. (See Acts 1:25; 1 Corinthians 10:12; Galatians 5:4; Matthew 13:41; 1 Corinthians 9:27; Titus 1:2).
37. Remember the five main points of Calvinism with the word **TULIP**.  
**T**—Total Depravity (one's spiritual nature is dead and he is unable to save himself).  
**U**—Unconditional Election (God elects us out of His own good pleasure for reasons that have not been given).  
**L**—Limited Atonement (The atonement of Christ on the cross was made only for the elect).  
**I**—Irresistible Grace (His grace is irresistible).  
**P**—Perseverance of the Saints (once saved, always saved).
38. All points making up **TULIP** are false!
39. Presbyterians use instruments of music in worship.
40. Where John Calvin preached, instruments of music were not used. They were later adopted by his followers.
41. In its history there have been seventeen divisions within the Presbyterian church.
42. The largest single body of Presbyterians in America is the United Presbyterian Church.
43. The first lesbian minister was recently accepted into the Presbyterian church.

The points mentioned above are not exclusive to one group of Presbyterians. All of them do, however, believe some of the doctrines mentioned. Some of the different groups are (1) United Presbyterian Church in the U.S.A., (2) Presbyterian Church in the United States, (3) Associate Presbyterian Church of North America, (4) Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church (General Synod), (5) Cumberland Presbyterian Church, (6) Second Cumberland Presbyterian Church in the United States, (7) Reformed Presbyterian Church, Evangelical Synod, (8) Orthodox Presbyterian Church, (9) Reformed Presbyterian Church of North America (Old School).

## **SOME THINGS YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES**

By Clarence Lavender

Both our Lord Jesus Christ and his inspired apostles warned about false teachers. For instance, Christ pointed out that we should beware of false prophets: "Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree, cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast in the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them (Matthew 7:15-20).

Do the Jehovah's Witnesses (JWs) produce good or evil fruit by their teachings? Well, you be the judge, by testing their doctrines by the Bible. The following are just a few of the things you should be aware of when they knock on your door

1. Their origin and history center around three men, Charles Taze Russell, Joseph Franklin Rutherford, and Nathan Homer Knorr.
2. Much of the doctrine of the JW's was borrowed from the Adventists.
3. The Watchtower Bible and Tract Society was begun in 1884 by Russell.
4. Russell's wife sued him for divorce in 1913.
5. One of Charles Russell's money making schemes was the sale of so-called "Miracle Wheat" for \$1.00 per pound.
6. Russell claimed it was better to read his writings, Studies in the Scriptures, than to read the Bible.
7. Rutherford, second president of the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society, claimed he was divinely inspired.
8. Rutherford antagonized the Canadian and American governments by writing anti-war and unpatriotic statements in various publications. JW's do not honor the United States flag.
9. The name "Jehovah's Witnesses" was adopted officially by the members in Columbus, Ohio on July 26, 1931.
10. Rutherford wrote over 100 books and they have been translated into over 80 languages.
11. The JW's have their own translation of the Bible; it is called New World Translation.
12. Nathan Homer Knorr, in 1942, was elected to be the third president of the Watchtower Society.
13. JW's teach that the promise of Christ's second coming was fulfilled in 1914, when he made an invisible return.
14. JW's deny the doctrine of the Trinity, or Triune Godhead.
15. JW's, like the Mormons, are a cult, in that they also deny the deity of Christ.

16. They deny the bodily resurrection of Christ from the grave. They teach it was purely spiritual.
17. They teach men are wholly mortal, that they, like animals, cease to exist when they die.
18. They teach there is no hell, that all consciousness terminates at death.
19. To JW's, the word death means annihilation.
20. In 1920 Mr. Rutherford published a book entitled Millions Now Living Will Never Die; in 1942 Rutherford himself died!
21. Rutherford taught that in 1925 Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and other faithful prophets would visibly appear on earth.
22. Millions Now Living Will Never Die has been taken off the market by the Watchtower Society.
23. As with all denominational bodies, JW's ASSUME their own definition of terms, create a set of expressions not in the Bible, and argue from their ASSUMED PREMISES as if they were true.
24. JW's teach Jesus was not divine until after his resurrection.
25. They teach "Christ Jesus, the divine, was born three days after his resurrection."
26. They teach the year 1914 "marks the birth of the kingdom."
27. The wicked will never be resurrected.
28. The body of Christ can have only 144,000 members.
29. The followers of Christ should not marry and bring forth children but wait until after Armageddon.
30. Jesus did not begin to reign as king until 1914.
31. The elect, who died in Christ, have already been resurrected.
32. All are born sinners.
33. The "Jonadads," followers other than the 144,000, should never partake of the Lord's Supper.
34. They deny blood transfusions to their members, even if their lives are at stake.
35. Many JW's have died rather than take a blood transfusion.
36. The Holy Spirit is not a person, but an active force.
37. They baptize in the name of the Father, Son and the Organization.
38. Followers of the Watchtower become "slaves."
39. They have a meritorious system of works – door to door
40. The upper-class (144,000) are referred to as the "anointed," the rest of the followers are called "other sheep."
41. They believe Christ was a created being.
42. When Christ was baptized he was only a man, not the Son of God.
43. Based on the teachings of the Watchtower, they claim to be the only real religion.
44. Following Armageddon the 144,000 will rule from heaven over the "other sheep" who will live on a renovated earth.
45. JW's spend five (5) hours a week going from door to door; they also hand in a monthly time report.
46. They will not serve in any branch of the military services. To salute the flag is idolatrous.
47. They do not celebrate any birthdays or holidays.

48. They teach Jesus did not come forth from the grave in bodily form, instead they say, “somewhere Jehovah miraculously preserved the body of Jesus.”
49. To JW’s, other people’s children are considered “Unclean.”
50. They teach excommunication of members.
51. Their “end of the world” prophecies have all failed—1914, 1925, 1975.
52. They practice “shunning.”
53. They allow no critical thinking concerning their organization.
54. The “governing body” rules the Watchtower, not with the Bible, but with “organization policy.”
55. There is no information as to who all the individuals were who made the Watchtower translation of the Bible.

To believe the Jehovah’s Witnesses’ doctrine is to deny the Bible.

## THE HISTORY AND HERESIES OF THE “JEHOVAH’S WITNESSES”

Charles Taze Russell was born February 16, 1852, and grew up in Pennsylvania. He had no particular interest in religion in early youth until coming in contact with the Seventh-Day Adventist movement, from which he adopted many of his peculiar ideas. In 1870 he organized a Bible class in Pittsburgh; he was elected “Pastor” six years later. In 1879 Russell founded “Zion’s Watch Tower,” which later became “Zion’s Watch Tower and Tract Society” (1884). Eventually, the movement was denominated “The Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society.” Headquarters were established in Brooklyn, New York, and in 1931 the group adopted the name “Jehovah’s Witnesses.”

As the founder of a religious movement Russell’s character was less than exemplary. In 1906 his wife divorced him on the grounds of unmanly conduct and over familiarity with other women. At one time “Pastor” Russell sold what he called “miracle wheat,” which he asserted would grow five times as much as ordinary grain. The wheat was tested by the government and was found to be inferior in quality.

Charles Russell died in 1916; he was succeeded by J. R. Rutherford, who gladly received the mantle of the cult. Rutherford’s career was no less illustrious than his predecessor’s. He served a term in the Federal Penitentiary at Atlanta in 1918 for violation of the “Espionage Act.” Rutherford became the great champion of the Witness movement. He authored more than 100 books and pamphlets and his writings have been translated into many languages. Rutherford died in 1942.

The “Jehovah’s Witnesses” meet in buildings called Kingdom Halls and they spend many hours each week standing on street corners displaying the Watchtower magazine or going door-to-door peddling their propaganda. Those who devote full time to the work are called “pioneers.” They relish discussing biblical topics with those who are ill-prepared to deal with them. However they strenuously avoid debates with qualified opponents. Usually, they will not even read material written by those of other religious persuasions. The Witnesses advocate a number of unusual teachings that are in contradiction to the sacred Scriptures. Consider the following.

**Godhead** - Though the Bible teaches that God is “one” (Deut. 6:4; Jas. 2:19), the numeral denominates the unity of nature that is characteristic of the holy trinity. Scripture is clear, however, that that divine nature is possessed by a plurality of Persons, designated in the New Testament as the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit (Matt. 28:19; 2 Cor. 13:14). The Witnesses deny this fundamental biblical concept.

First, they allege that the Holy Spirit is merely “the active force of God. It is not a person...”<sup>1</sup> Yet note the testimony of the sacred writings (Acts 13:2-4; 16:6,7). The Spirit both acts (1 Tim. 4:1), and can be acted upon (Eph. 4:30).

Second, the Watchtower Society contends that there was a time when Jehovah was “all alone in the universal space.”<sup>2</sup> Eventually, it is claimed, God created Michael, the archangel, who came to be identified in the New Testament as Jesus Christ.<sup>3</sup> The truth is, the divine Word (Christ, John 1:1-14) existed eternally (Mic. 5:2). The imperfect tense verbal form *en* (rendered “was”) in John 1:1 reveals that the Word always was with God, hence, was not created. Moreover, the inspired argument developed in Hebrews 1 demonstrates that Jesus Christ is superior to angels, thus not of the angel class; in fact, all the angels worship Him (1:6).

Third, it is obvious that the Watchtower Witnesses do not believe in the true divine nature of Jesus Christ. The Lord, they charge, was nothing more “than a perfect man.”<sup>4</sup> The Bible affirms, however, that “the Word was God” (John 1:1; cf. 20:28); Christ is “one” with the Father (John 10:30), i.e., they share the same divine essence. The deity of Christ is abundantly established in the Scriptures.<sup>5</sup> Moreover, whereas the New Testament declares that Jesus was demonstrated to be the Son of God by His resurrection from the dead (Rom. 1:4). The Witnesses deny that Christ was raised bodily; they allege that He was brought forth merely as a “divine spirit creature.”<sup>6</sup>

**The Kingdom of Christ** - The Bible teaches that the kingdom of Christ was set up on the day of Pentecost (Mark 9:1; Acts 1:8; 2:4). It is entered by the new birth process (John 3:3-5), and its citizens are translated from a worldly domain into a special relationship with the Son of God (Col. 1:13). The earthly phase of Christ’s kingdom is, of course, the church. Church members are also citizens of the kingdom (cf. Rev. 1:4, 6-9). The Watchtower disciples have a completely erroneous view concerning the Lord’s kingdom. First, they suggest that the kingdom did not begin operation with full power until A.D. 1914 (look at Mark 9:1 in that light). Second, they contend that the kingdom “is entirely heavenly, having no earthly part.”<sup>7</sup> Were not the saints at Colossae living on earth (Col. 1:13)? Is not the Lord’s Supper observed on earth (cf. Luke 22:29,30; 1 Cor. 10:21)? The Watchtower dogma regarding the kingdom is false.

**The Return of Christ** - The New Testament affirms that the Second Coming of Christ will occur without immediate warning. Like a thief in the night, the Lord will suddenly appear (Matt. 24:36f; 1 Thes. 5:2; 2 Pet. 3:10; Rev. 16:15). Christ’s return will be both visible (Heb. 9:28) and audible (1 Thes. 4:16); indeed, it will be universally apparent (Matt. 24:27). Amazingly, the Watchtower Witnesses claim that it has already occurred! They assert that His coming (presence) was accomplished in A.D. 1914, thus “he has already arrived and is present.”<sup>8</sup> Was the Second Coming universally manifest in 1914? It was not. How do the Witnesses account for this? They argue that the Lord was seen only by “his faithful witnesses,” and even then not literally, but only “by the eyes of one’s understanding.”<sup>9</sup> (Yet, see Rev. 1:7.) In connection with that “coming of Christ,” J. F. Rutherford prophesied that by 1915 “all present governments will be

dissolved” and humanity would witness “the complete overthrow of earth’s present rulership.”<sup>10</sup> Of course this never happened. Note this admission: “It is true that the Witnesses have made mistakes in their understanding of what would occur at the end of certain time periods, but they have not made the mistake of losing faith....”<sup>11</sup> They should have lost faith in a system characterized by false prophecy (cf. Deut. 18:22).

**The Nature of Man** - Man was created in the image of God (Gen. 1:26). Since God is not physical (cf. John 4:24; Luke 24:39), it follows that there is something about man that is beyond the physical. Actually, the human being consists of body, soul and spirit (1 Thes. 5:23). There is an outer man and an inner man (2 Cor. 4:16). The “inner man,” i.e., the human spirit, is capable of knowing and feeling (1 Cor. 2:11; Dan. 7:15). The Bible clearly teaches that man has a soul that survives the death of his body (Matt. 10:28). The JW’s deny this fundamental biblical truth. They suggest that “the claim of religionists that man has an immortal soul, and therefore differs from the beast, is not Scriptural.”<sup>12</sup> Again: “... does each human have a spirit that goes on living as an intelligent personality after it ceases to function in the body? No.”<sup>13</sup> The Witnesses thus allege that death is the “termination of existence; utter cessation of conscious, intellectual or physical activity.”<sup>14</sup> However, both Lazarus and the rich man were conscious after death (Luke 16:23-25).<sup>15</sup> Moreover, the martyred souls under the altar of God had certainly survived the death of their bodies and they were conscious, pleading for justice (Rev. 6:9f). Materialism is not consistent with Scripture.

**The General Resurrection** - The Bible indicates that there will be a general resurrection of the dead, involving both the wicked and the righteous. Jesus declared that all in the tomb, the good and the evil, would eventually come forth (John 5:28,29), and Paul contended that there will be a resurrection of both the just and the unjust (Acts 24:15). The Witnesses, however, dispute the Lord and His inspired apostle. They assert: “Those who die wicked beyond reform or correction and beyond redemption by Christ’s blood will not be brought forth from the grave to judgment in the New World.”<sup>16</sup> Yet see 2 Corinthians 5:10 where all are to be judged.

**The Punishment of the Wicked** - According to the Bible, those who die in a state of rebellion toward God will be subjected to affliction in the hadean realm immediately after death (i.e., the punitive area of that region - Luke 16:23-25; cf. 2 Pet. 2:4). The Witnesses deny this. In the book, Let God Be True, Chapter VI is titled: “Hell, A Place Of Rest In Hope.” By “hell” they mean “hades” (inaccurately tendered “hell” in the KJV). However, the rich man in Luke 16 never entertained the notion that he was in a “place of rest in hope.” He certainly was not resting, and his condition was hopeless! Furthermore, the final state of the wicked, following the day of Christ’s coming, will be one of intense punishment. This judgment will be characterized by suffering (2 Thes. 1:9), tribulation and anguish (Rom. 2:9) and torment (Rev. 14:10). Hell will be a realm of shame and contempt (Dan. 12:2), where the agony is unending (Mark 9:48). All of these descriptives indicate that the final disposition of the wicked will be that of conscious existence in a state of alienation from the Creator. The Witnesses reject this biblical information. They contend that: “In all places where hell is translated from the

Greek word Gehenna it means everlasting destruction or extinction.”<sup>17</sup> The JWs also affirm that: “The ultimate end of Satan is complete annihilation.”<sup>18</sup> Contrast that, though, with Revelation 20:10. “And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where are also the beast and the false prophet; and they shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.” The Witnesses are quite mistaken in their view of retribution.

**Salvation Issues** - The “Jehovah’s Witnesses” teach a number of concepts that are at variance with the biblical doctrine of salvation. First, contrary to numerous passages in Scripture, which either assert or imply the innocence of children, the advocates of Watchtowerism contend that infants are born in sin. Hear them: “Man’s need of a ransom is shown in the fact that all men are born imperfect and sinners...”<sup>19</sup> However, the Bible affirms that the imagination of the human heart is on evil from one’s “youth” (Gen. 8:21), not his birth. Children are even held up as models for those who aspire to enter the kingdom of heaven (Matt. 18:3; 19:14), and we are urged to be like them in disposition (1 Cor. 14: 20). Second, though the New Testament plainly teaches that water baptism is “for the remission of sins” (Acts 2:38), or to “wash away [one’s] sins” (Acts 22:16), the Witnesses contend that “sins [are] not washed away by baptism”<sup>20</sup> – an arrogant contradiction to inspired testimony. To these people, baptism is merely “an outward symbol” of “unconditional dedication” to do the will of Jehovah God.<sup>21</sup> Third, the JWs teach that some will be granted opportunity for salvation after death. In a 1908 debate with L. S. White, Charles T. Russell, founder of the Watchtower movement, denied that salvation is confined to this “present life.” Additionally, he affirmed that when the “unjust” are raised, “vast multitudes of them will be saved.”<sup>22</sup> The Bible knows nothing of post-mortem redemption. “Now is the day of salvation” (2 Cor. 6:2). After death comes the judgment (Heb. 9:27); there is no second chance for salvation. The Lord taught that some would seek to obey after it was too late for them (Luke 13:24-27), and the parable of the virgins teaches that all preparation must be made before death and the final return of the Lord (Matt. 25:1-13).

**Watch Tower Authority** - Although the JWs claim a belief in the exclusive authority of the Scriptures for determining correct beliefs and practices, in actuality they do not. An early issue of The Watchtower magazine stated that “people cannot see the divine plan in studying the Bible by itself.” The Witnesses were warned that if one stopped reading “Pastor” Russell’s Studies in the Scriptures, “within two years he goes into darkness.”<sup>23</sup> For example, the disciples of Russell/Rutherford admit that for half a century they were not known as “Jehovah’s Witnesses.” It was only in 1931 that they convened a conference and “resolved” what the divine name would henceforth be.<sup>24</sup> These religionists assert that Jesus is providing “spiritual food” today through a visible instrument or agency [i.e., the Watchtower Society] used to publish it.”<sup>25</sup> Anyone who has dealt extensively with the JWs knows that they may not think for themselves, or decide biblical issues on their own. They “look to the governing body” to “resolve difficult questions”<sup>26</sup> Truly, they are Watchtower slaves.

**Creation Account** - The JWs have a reputation for opposing the theory of evolution. Actually, though, they compromise the creation account considerably. For instance, they repudiate the biblical affirmation that the entire creation was accomplished in six literal days (Ex. 20:11). They stretch the creation “days” to spans of 7,000 years each, thus, the Lord’s creative activity supposedly occurred over an era of 42,000 years.<sup>27</sup> Such Bible perversion is inexcusable, but the JWs are not alone in this type of textual manipulation.

**Conclusion** - Space limitation forbids dealing with numerous other errors advocated by the Watchtower Society. The zeal and sincerity of these people is no substitute for truth. Christians need to be better informed concerning the JW doctrines, and, with genuine love, teach these people the truth. WJ

## ENDNOTES

1. *Reasoning from the Scriptures* (Watchtower, 1989), p. 381.
2. *Let God Be True* (Watchtower, 1946). p. 26.
3. *Reasoning from the Scriptures*, p. 218.
4. *Let God Be True*, p. 87.
5. See the author's booklet, *Jehovah's Witnesses and the Doctrine of the Deity of Christ*.
6. *Let God Be True*, p. 98.
7. *Make Sure Of All Things* (Watchtower, 1953). p. 226.
8. *Let God Be True*, p. 188.
9. *Ibid.*, p. 187.
10. *Studies in the Scriptures* (Watchtower), Vol. II, pp. 98, 99, 101.
11. *Reasoning from the Scriptures*, p. 136.
12. *Let God Be True*, p. 60.
13. *Reasoning from the Scriptures*, p. 383.
14. *Make Sure Of All Things*, p. 86.
15. See: *Christian Courier*, December, 1990.
16. *Let God Be True*, p. 287.
17. *Ibid.*, p. 77.
18. *Ibid.*, p. 55.
19. *Ibid.*, p. 96.
20. *Make Sure Of All Things*, p. 30.
21. *Reasoning from the Scriptures*, p. 54.
22. *The Russell-White Debate* (Rowe, 1912), p. xv; cf. LBT, 266.
23. *The Watchtower*, September 15, 1910, p. 298.
24. *Let God Be True*, p. 213.
25. *Ibid.*, p. 189.
26. *Reasoning from the Scriptures*, p. 205.
27. *Let God Be True*, p. 155.

Wayne Jackson  
*Christian Courier* July 1992

## MORMONISM AND PROPHECY

The Mormon Church was founded by Joseph Smith, Jr., who claimed to be a prophet of God. Mormons are thus required to “give heed unto all his words and commandments” (DC 21:4,5). It is, of course, a matter of historical record that many of Smith’s prophecies proved false. For example, the “seer” prophesied that the American civil-war conflict of the mid,1800’s would become so intense that “war shall be poured out upon all nations” (DC 87:1-3). In 1835 he declared that the “coming of the Lord” would “wind up the scene” within fifty-six years (Roberts, p. 182). Smith foretold that the Mormon temple would be erected in Independence, Missouri (DC 57:1-3). None of these “prophecies” was fulfilled, and they have been a source of considerable humiliation to Mormon leaders.

Occasionally, a Mormon writer will attempt to justify Smith’s prophetic blunders. One such effort is reflected in a recently published book titled, *A Ready Reply*, authored by Michael T. Griffith. Griffith contends that after “studying prophecy for several years” he has “deduced” that there are certain rules which must be considered in evaluating prophecy. One of these rules is: “A prophet can be mistaken about certain details of a prophecy but correct with regard to its central message” (p. 23).

Mr. Griffith’s “deducer” is in need of repair. There is a logical axiom which asserts that the totality of an object is equal to the sum of its parts. In other words, if the details of a prophecy are incorrect, the prophecy per se cannot be correct. Again, the writer says: “A prophet can misinterpret the timetable for a prophecy’s fulfillment (this, of course, does not invalidate (the prophecy itself)” (p. 23). Does that statement make any sense at all?

Further, the author argues in the following fashion. There are “prophecies in the Bible that plainly and clearly did not come to pass” (p. 22). Since this is the case (he suggests), why should folks be critical because certain prophecies of Joseph Smith did not come to pass? There are two points that must be made here. First, by implication, the argument concedes that Smith *did* utter false prophecies. Second, it is *not* the case that Bible prophets spoke oracles which “clearly did not come to pass” – although Griffith cites three examples which supposedly support his claim. We will consider each of these. First, however, we must make this observation. Biblical prophecy was sometimes conditional, i.e., it depended upon human response. For instance, Jonah declared that Nineveh would be destroyed in forty days (3:4). However, when the people repented, the edict was lifted. Clearly, therefore, that prophecy was conditional. This fact must be kept in mind in dealing with Bible prophecy. But consider examples of Bible prophecy that supposedly failed.

(1) Griffith argues that the prophet Nathan foretold that the “Davidic empire” would be established “forever” (2 Sam. 7:5-17), but that it was not. It was not, however,

David's political dynasty that the prophet had in view. He spoke of Christ (cf. Heb. 1:5), and the regal dynasty to be manifested through the Lord's spiritual kingdom (cf. Lk. 1:32,33; Acts 2:30f). Griffith misinterpreted the prophecy.

(2) The gentleman indicts the Lord himself. He states that Jesus prophesied that his "second coming would occur before the disciples returned from the mission trip on which He was sending them," as recorded in Matthew 10:23. He says: "This, of course, did not happen" (p. 25). But there is absolutely no proof that Matthew 10:23 had reference to the "second coming" of Christ. There are several senses in the New Testament in which the Lord was said to "come." The context must determine the meaning (see Jackson, pp. 22-43). The "coming," mentioned in Matthew 10:23, is almost certainly a reference to the destruction of Jerusalem in A.D. 70 (cf. Lenski, pp. 405,406). What sort of blighted soul attempts to place the Son of God in an embarrassing light in order to salvage the reputation of Joseph Smith?

(3) Finally, Griffith cites Judges 13:5, where the heavenly Messenger said that Samson would "begin to deliver Israel out of the hand of the Philistines." He says "there is no way it can reasonably be concluded that Samson fulfilled this prophecy" (p. 16). Again, the author is quite wrong. A consideration of Judges 14,15 reveals several episodes in which Samson assaulted the Philistines with a gradual and increasing ferocity. But, as Keil notes, "he was not to complete the deliverance of his people from the hands of the Philistines, but simply to commence it, i.e., to show to the people, by the manifestation of super-natural heroic power, the possibility of deliverance, or to exhibit the strength with which a man could slay a thousand foes" (p. 402; emp. added).

A consideration of the foregoing data reveals two things. (1) The examples cited do not show the Bible to be in error. (2) Joseph Smith, Jr. – the Mormon "prophet" – has not been rehabilitated. *WJ*

## ENDNOTES

DC: *Doctrine & Covenants* (1952, Salt Lake City, UT: Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints).

Griffith, Michael (1994), *A Ready Reply* (Bountiful, UT: Horizon Publishers).

Jackson, Wayne (1990), *The A.D. 70 Theory – A Review of the Max King Doctrine* (Stockton, CA: Courier Publications).

Keil, C.F. & Delitzsch, F. (1978 Reprint), *Commentary on the Old Testament* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans), Vol. 2.

Lenski, R. C. H. (1943), *St. Matthew's Gospel* (Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg).

Roberts, B. H. (1950), *History of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints* (Salt Lake City, UT: Deseret), Vol. 11.

## THE BAPTIST CHURCH MANUAL Harrell Davidson

In this short article, it shall be my purpose to show some of the contrasts and contradictions between the Hiscox **Standard Baptist Manual** and the doctrine of Christ. We shall refer to it simply as the **Manual**. All quotations will be from the **Manual** wherein it is used.

Edward T. Hiscox was born in 1814 and died in 1901. The foreword in his book tells of it being a “favorite among countless thousands of Baptists in the United States.” The fact that a church would have to have a manual to go by instead of the scriptures is appalling. God’s word, the Bible, is complete and furnishes man completely unto every good work (2 Tim. 3:16,17). If the Bible, and the Bible alone, cannot lead us, we might as well stop our religious activities. The **Manual** suggests one needs something in addition to the word of God to go by in matters related to the church.

This is precisely the claim that The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints, better known as Mormons, makes for themselves. They come to your door and say, “We believe the Bible, but we have this book of Mormon.” We say to them, “Come in and let’s just study the Bible.” The reply is normally, “No, thanks.”

In the chapter, “The Nature Of The Church,” the **Manual** shows the process through which people are to go in starting a new church. It points out that careful thought and much mature deliberation should be made consulting “wise and experienced sources, including the association or convention with which the proposed church will likely affiliate.” We read nowhere in the scriptures of the Lord’s church ever belonging to a convention or getting permission from a convention to function in any community in the world.

Next, the Baptist church is to “draft a proposed constituting act and church covenant .... bylaws may also be drafted at this time, together with articles of faith, if desired.” The Bible is as silent as the tomb on such a constitution or articles of faith. Romans 10:17 says, “So then faith cometh by hearing, and the hearing by the word of God.” God’s word produces faith enough to save through obedience. This must not be enough for the Hiscox folks.

On page 27 of the same chapter in question: “Resolved, that guided as we believe by the Holy Spirit, and relying on the blessing of God, we do here and now by this act constitute ourselves a church of Jesus Christ to perform his service and to be governed by his will ....”

It was the will of Jesus Christ to build His church. He said: “And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell

shall not prevail against it" (Mat. 16:18). No church that Jesus built ever wore any other than his name. His church is not a denomination among many as the **Manual** suggests. The new Baptist church being formed should then "petition the local Baptist association for recognition...." Again, the Bible is silent. This is the problem with the **Manual** all the way through, it is not inspired.

In the chapter entitled "Church Membership," the Manual says, "...the new birth begets Christian fellowship; but to secure church fellowship, that change must be confessed in baptism" (p. 35). On page 34, the Manual says: "baptism constitutes the ritual or ceremonial qualification." According to the **Manual**, the new birth begets Christian fellowship and baptism is a ritual qualification. One can see the problem coming long before one gets there, for in the same chapter under the subheading "Modes of Admission" we quote Note 1: "By Baptism – A person may be admitted to the church on a profession of faith in Christ, by baptism. First he makes known his desire for baptism and union with the church, to the pastor or brethren. If they, after proper investigation, become satisfied of his readiness for that step, the church considers the question of his reception; and then, if satisfied, votes that he be received as a member, on being baptized."

Mind you this person is already saved on his profession of faith, but is voted on before he can be baptized and be affiliated with that particular congregation. The Lord's church never ever voted on anyone before or after baptism. The baptized believers are added to the church (Acts 2:47). The Lord does the adding, not the congregation. In the chapter on "The Christian Ministry," (p. 55), "The pastor has the oversight and supervision of all the interests of the church, and of all departments of its work, both spiritual and temporal." The Baptist Pastor (minister) is over the church. He is in charge of both the spiritual and temporal. He runs the show, in other words. The New Testament shows that elders rule the church (Heb. 13:17; Acts 20:28).

In the chapter on "Christian Ordinances," and in particular on the partaking of the Lord's Supper, page 92, Note 7 says, "There is no scriptural rule as to the frequency with which, nor time or place at which it shall be observed." This is a plain contradiction of Acts 20:7 where the disciples came together on the first day of the week to break bread. Again, the **Manual** is not true to the scriptures. Page 93 says that "preaching is not worship." This plainly contradicts Acts 2:42. The same is true when the **Manual** deals with baptism. On page 83, the **Manual** says, "Baptism may not be essential to salvation, but it is essential to obedience."

All New Testament converts were told to be baptized before salvation could be obtained (Acts 2:38; 22:16; 1 Peter 3:2 1). The **Manual** then says: "Regeneration is by the Holy Spirit alone, and should precede baptism." Again, we have the cart pulling the horse. Regeneration is attained after baptism.

Again, the Manual says: "Baptism, therefore, is an act of obedience, and as such brings the candidate into a more intimate and exclusive fellowship with his Lord; but it

possesses no power in itself to remit sin, to change the heart, or to sanctify the spirit.” Acts 2:38 still says, “Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized, every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins .....

Now, which will we accept? Will we accept the **Manual** or the New Testament? It cannot be the **Manual** *and* the New Testament for the **Manual** contradicts the New Testament on almost every page.

Christianity is not dependent on the whims or doctrines of men. Thank God that such is true.

P. O. Box 358  
Obion, TN 38240

## THE ORIGIN AND HISTORY OF THE BAPTIST CHURCH

### Daniel Denham

The doctrine of "Church Succession" has been a favorite dogma among certain Baptist groups, especially those who have held to Old Landmarkism. The Missionary Baptist churches, in recent years, have been the best known defenders of that doctrine, which maintains that there is a discernible line of churches holding to the basic tenets of the Baptist church going back to the days of the Apostles. The first church in the New Testament, according to their teaching, was a Baptist church. Various opinions have been defended for "Church Succession" as to when precisely that first church began.

Some Baptist successionists have contended that it started with the ministry of John the Baptist; i.e., that John built and founded the "Baptist" church. Others have held that it began sometime during the earthly ministry of Christ (e.g., at His baptism by John the Baptist, the Lord's call of the Apostles, the sending out of the seventy, et. al.). Some have taught that it began in Acts 2 at Jerusalem (c. 30 A. D.). However, the basic doctrine of "Church Succession" has no foundation in fact. Not only are there logical and biblical problems with the theory, the recorded histories of the Baptists themselves are against it. They point to a much later date for the beginning of the Baptist church and show by implication the Baptist church cannot be the church of the New Testament, which Jesus promised to build (Mat. 16:18,19) and that during the life of some of the Apostles (Mark 9:1; cf. Luke 24:44,50; Acts 1:4,8; 2:1,47). To the historical evidence concerning the origin and development of the Baptist church, we now turn.

Henry C. Vedder, a noted Baptist historian and the author of a **Short History Of The Baptists**, has written of his own denomination: "The history of Baptist churches cannot be carried, by the scientific method, farther back than the year 1611, when the first Anabaptist church consisting wholly of Englishmen was founded in Amsterdam by John Smyth, the Se-Baptist" (p.4).

David Benedict, another well-known Baptist historian and the author of two major works on the history of the denomination, finds a Baptist church a few years earlier than Vedder. He says, "The first regularly organized Baptist church of which we possess any account, is dated from 1607, and was formed in London by a Mr. Smyth, who had been a clergyman in the church of England" ("Jubilee Report," p. 304). It will be observed that, while there is a slight discrepancy as to the exact year and place of origin for the first Baptist church between these two highly trained and accomplished historians, they both reject the doctrine of "Church Succession" and place the establishment of the Baptist church centuries after the death of the last Apostle!

The historical method of inquiry does not, as Vedder and Benedict demonstrate, validate the Baptist doctrine of "Church Succession." Vedder writes, "if every church of

Christ (Note: he uses this of denominational churches in general, HDD) were today to become apostate, it would be possible and right for any true believers to organize tomorrow another church on the apostolic model of faith and practice, and that church would have the only apostolic succession of faith in the Lord Christ and obedience to him" (p. 7).

Thomas Armitage, the most revered of Baptist historians, also rejected the notion of a discernible line of Baptist churches going back to the Apostolic Age in his monumental work *History Of The Baptists* (pp. 2,3). He contended that the only basis for identifying a church as apostolic in belief and practice is loyalty to the "pure doctrine" of the New Testament.

The history of the Baptist church rightfully begins with the work of John Smyth, a member of the British Separatists who had broken off from the Church of England and had fled their native land for sanctuary from persecution. They arrived in Amsterdam where they were influenced by an Anabaptist group called the Mennonites, named after their leader Meno Simon. The Anabaptists practiced sprinkling for baptism, but they did reject infant baptism. They "re-baptized" (sprinkled) those who had been sprinkled at birth (hence "ana" meaning "again"). Smyth re-baptized" himself and his followers by affusion (pouring). Anabaptists they became, but the followers of Smyth refused to fully adopt all the ways and doctrines of the Mennonites.

They excommunicated the founder of this first Baptist church. Smyth died in 1612. His people filtered back across the English Channel. The old Anabaptist doctrine of the inherent evil and sinfulness of civil government was rejected by them, and they returned to be "good" Englishmen on English soil. The first two churches established upon their return were called "General Baptists," as they believed in a general atonement for all. Later there arose a Particular Baptist church, which held to a limited atonement as taught by John Calvin.

Throughout its history, the Baptist church would experience schisms over the doctrine of the atonement. Many Baptist groups today have their doctrinal roots in the brand of Calvinism taught by the Particular Baptists during the Reformation. Some have opted for the teachings of Jacob Arminius. They, like the Methodist churches, reject the idea of irresistible grace and consequently also that of a limited atonement. They hold to some concept of "free will," though they do not utterly cast off the shackles of Calvin, for, like Arminius, they believe that a special "enlightenment" or "illumination" from the Holy Spirit is needed to permit men to then exercise their will to discern the truth and believe.

Calvin held that the action of the Holy Spirit did it all for man by infusing the grace of God directly into the heart of the sinner, thus regenerating him without the need for knowledge of God's Word. Some Baptists flip-flop between the competing systems and are found on both sides of any controversy respecting the atonement, the operation of the Holy Spirit in conversion and sanctification, and the free will of man.

About 1644 (some place the date earlier, about 1638) another major division occurred among Baptists. Some began to insist on immersion as the only mode of scriptural baptism. They were called by their enemies "Immersion Baptists." They published a confession of faith, which was the model for many confessions like that of Philadelphia (1724) and New Hampshire. The word "Baptist" came to be applied almost exclusively to the immersionists of the denomination as a distinctive name.

Roger Williams, a Separatist minister who came to America in 1631, organized the first Baptist church in the New World at Providence, Rhode Island in 1639. Two years later another was organized by John Clarke at Newport. These were both Calvinistic, and thus, of the Particular branch. However, during his travels and revivals in the colonies, George Whitefield championed the tenets of Arminianism. The effect on the emerging Baptist congregations, which had begun to spring up in every colony, was profound. A furor arose between the Calvinistic "Old Lights" or "Regulars," who opposed the emotionalism stirred by the revivals of Whitefield, and the Arminian "New Lights" or "Separates," who held to an aggressive missionary posture.

A constitution signed between the groups quelled the dispute, but Whitefield's sermons spurred missionary fervor among the Baptists for generations. Zeal unbridled led to their participation in the formation of the first Protestant missionary society in America in cooperation with other denominations, and by 1814, the founding of the first distinctively Baptist missionary society, the General Missionary Convention of the Baptist Denomination in the United States of America for Foreign Missions. They did not bother to consult Holy Writ as to biblical authority for such practices.

Other institutions were established: a general convention, tract society, several smaller missionary societies, and the Baptist Young People's Union. Two major manuals for church organization, et. al., were published (Hiscox's and Pendleton's). Doctrinal and geo-political rifts splintered the Baptist church into a number of small fellowships. A listing of the major groups comprising the Baptist church is found in Mead's **Handbook Of Denominations In The United States**.

Route I Box 14 51 ,E  
Morrison, TN 37357

## In Search Of The Baptist Church

From whence came the Baptist church? From God or from men? If from God, surely, adherents to Baptist doctrine could present absolute, undeniable, irrefutable evidence to show such a Divine origin. If no such proof may be produced, it must follow the Baptist church came from men.

If the Baptist church came from men, it offers no more hope for salvation than any other manmade organization; that is, it offers none! How so? Jesus of Nazareth, the Son of God and promised Messiah, purchaser and builder of His church, proclaimed all who follow the commandments of men worship in vain (Mat. 15:9). God never has nor shall He ever accept such worship or worshippers.

Friends, we are careful to insure our purpose is just and our motives honorable. We seek to bring men to Christ through the Truth and in so doing, to glorify God. To do so, we must uphold the Truth of God and, by so doing, expose the false doctrines of men that would damn men's souls to eternal torment – not because we hate anyone, but because we love the soul of everyone.

Thus, we dare not present as the beliefs of our Baptist friends that which is not true. To show the Truth and expose error, we do not have to contrive imaginary false doctrines. There are far too many in the world as it is. To be sure we do not misrepresent the position of our Baptist friends; i.e., the modern-day Baptist church, we contacted the largest Baptist church in Pensacola (around 5,300 members) for some answers to some very basic questions. The questions and answers follow.

*Question:* Where in the New Testament does one find the Baptist church?

*Baptist Answer.* **You do not find “the Baptist church” in the New Testament.** You do not find any church like “the Baptist church” or “the Methodist church” or “the Catholic church” in the Bible.

*Question:* Is there any church mentioned in the New Testament?

*Baptist Answer.* No. You can find the word “church” but nothing like “the Baptist church” or “the Methodist church.”

*Question:* If one cannot find the Baptist church in the Bible, where is the authority for there being such a church?

*Baptist Answer.* **The authority came from man. Man created the Baptist church, the Methodist church, the Catholic church, and so on.**

*Question:* If the authority came from man, and not from God, **how can one know which church is right?**

*Baptist Answer.* You can't. You have to determine that by the way you feel. **Everybody interprets the Bible differently and you have to determine which one is right by your interpretation.** The Baptists think they are right and the Methodists think they are right, and so on.

*Question:* Since the Baptist church is not in the Bible, when did it begin?

*Baptist Answer.* There are many different theories on that ... **it began in the late 1500's.**

To any honest reader, concerned about his soul, the above answers should flash a warning.

Should anyone want to be a part of a church not found in the Bible? Not if they want salvation.

Should anyone want to be a part of a church whose authority for existence; that is, for beginning and continuing, came from man and not from God? No.

Should anyone want to be a part of a church which espouses one's choice be made on the basis of how he feels instead of on what God said? Again, No.

Should anyone want to be a part of a church which began in the late 1500's instead of on the first Pentecost after the resurrection of Christ (Acts 2)? Surely not.

Friends, dare we stake our soul's salvation on membership in a church God never sanctioned and offer worship in vain with only a wish of a false hope on a perhaps maybe all will turn out for the good after all? Not me! Hopefully, not you either.

DEFENDER  
BOBBY LIDDELL, EDITOR